

## Durham E-Theses

---

*Education in Gateshead under the schools board  
1870-1903*

J. M. Thew

### How to cite:

---

Thew, J. M. (1967) Education in Gateshead under the schools board 1870-1903. Masters thesis, Durham University.

### Use policy

---

The full-text may be used and/or reproduced, and given to third parties in any format or medium, without prior permission or charge, for personal research or study, educational, or not-for-profit purposes provided that:

- a full bibliographic reference is made to the original source
- a <https://etheses.durham.ac.uk/id/eprint/9708/> is made to the metadata record in Durham E-Theses
- the full-text is not changed in any way

The full-text must not be sold in any format or medium without the formal permission of the copyright holders.

Please consult the [full Durham E-Theses policy](#) for further details.

Education in Gateshead under the  
School Boards 1870-1903

by

J. M. Thew, B.A. (Dunelm), Dip.Ed.

The copyright of this thesis rests with the author.  
No quotation from it should be published without  
his prior written consent and information derived  
from it should be acknowledged.

Submitted for the Degree of

Master of Education

October 1967.

## CONTENTS

List of Appendices		
List of Illustrations		
Acknowledgement		
		Page
List of Abbreviations used in Footnotes		(1.a.)
Preface		(i)
Introduction		(iii)
Chapter I	Gateshead Schools Before 1870	1.
Chapter II	The First School Board	21.
Chapter III	School Provision, 1871-79	28.
Chapter IV	Expansion of Educational Provision	60.
Chapter V	Attendance at Board Schools	81.
Chapter VI	The Day Industrial School	92.
Chapter VII	The Higher Grade Schools	112.
Chapter VIII	Evening Schools	130.
Chapter IX	Financial Difficulties	167.
Chapter X	The Teaching Staff	199.
Chapter XI	Pupil Teachers	240.
Chapter XII	The Curriculum of the Board Schools	272.
Chapter XIII	Religious Education	302.
Chapter XIV	Gateshead School of Art	315.
Conclusion		322.
Bibliography		373.
Index of Schools		377.

LIST OF APPENDICES

		Page
1.(i)	Advertisement of Rev. J. Tyson, Master of the Anchorage School.	324.
(ii)	Photograph of an Advertisement by James Charlton, Master of the Anchorage School in Gateshead Observer, Vol.I, No.1. November, 18th 1837.	325.
(iii)	Photograph of an Advertisement for books published by James Charlton in Gateshead Observer, November, 18th 1837.	326.
2.	List of Schools under Government Inspection and in Receipt of Parliamentary Grant, 31 December, 1871.	327.
3.(i)	Photograph of List of Gateshead Schools in 1870 in which the Ordinary Fee was less than 9d. per week.	329.
(ii)	Photograph of Table No.1. showing Gateshead Schools in 1870.	330.
4.	Members of Successive School Boards Elected Triennially 1870-1900.	331.
5.	List of School Board Permanent Officials.	336.
6.	Replies to Education Department's Requisition (Form No.86) of 20 December, 1870.	338.
7.	Agreement for Transfer to School Board of Rochester Street Congregational School.	341.
8.	Comparative Average Attendance Figures for Gateshead Board and Voluntary Schools, 1870-1900 and 1903.	343.
9.(i)	Abstract of School Board Annual Income 1870-1900.	346.
(ii)	Abstract of School Board Annual Expenditure 1870-1900.	348.
(iii)	Statement of Loans 1872-1903.	350.

10.	Amount of Precept and School Rate in £. 1870-1903.	352.
11.	School Boards:-	
	(a) Petition to House of Commons 1878.	354.
	(b) Memorial to Public Works Loan Board 1882.	356.
	(c) Open Letter to School Boards, 1884.	359.
	(d) Memorial to the Vice-President of Committee of Council on Education 1884.	361.
	(e) Memorial to the Chancellor of the Exchequer, 1885.	363.
	(f) Reply to the Royal Commission, 1886.	366.
12.	Pupil Teacher Agreement.	368.
13.	Leeds Pupil Teacher's Letter Setting Out Details of Work and Duties.	370.
14.	Syllabus of Religious Instruction.	371.

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

(Reproduced by permission of Gateshead Public Library)

	Following Page
1. The Tollbooth, High Street. At one time used as premises for the Anchorage School.	3.
2. Report of Committee of Gateshead New School for Year Ending September, 5th, 1811.	9.
3. St. James Chapel School	17.

A Map of Gateshead showing the position of all Gateshead Schools mentioned in the text is inserted in a folder inside the back cover.

## ACKNOWLEDGEMENT

I am indebted to the Director of Education for Gateshead and the Gateshead Education Committee for permission to use the manuscript records of the Gateshead School Board, and to the Librarian and staff of Gateshead Central Library for making the records and many other sources readily available. My thanks are also due to the staff of the Newcastle University Library, the Central Reference Library, Newcastle and the Department of Education and Science Library, London for the assistance they have given me during my researches. Finally, my thanks are due to the current headmaster of Prior Street School for lending to me the school log books.

LIST OF ABBREVIATIONS USED IN THE  
FOOTNOTES.

References to:-

1. Gateshead School Board Minutes are shown as S.B.M. Vol.--- followed by volume letter and page number.
  2. Gateshead School Board Triennial Reports are shown as --- T.R.--- preceded by ordinal number and followed by year of publication and page number.
  3. The log books of Prior Street schools are shown as Boys' Log Book or Girls' Log Book --- followed by page number.
  4. Committee of Council on Education Reports are shown as C of C on Ed.--- followed by year and page number.
  5. "Local Collection or Records of Remarkable Events" in Gateshead are shown as L.C.--- followed by year and page number.
  6. Newspapers are shown by the name of the paper followed by the day, month and year of publication. In some cases news cuttings inserted in the minutes are referred to as N.C.--- followed by S.B.M. Vol.--- and page number.
  7. Some extracts from a volume "Collected News Cuttings" in Gateshead Public Library are shown as N.C.--- followed by the name of the paper and day, month and year of publication.
- All other sources are fully acknowledged in the footnotes.

PREFACE

The aim of this thesis is to show the scale and range of the work done by the successive school boards in Gateshead from 1870 - 1903. (1)

The primary duty of a school board was to make good the deficiency of public elementary school places in its district. To show the magnitude of the task in Gateshead it is necessary to examine the elementary provision in the Borough by voluntary and private agencies before and after 1870. It is also necessary to remember that provision to meet the initial deficiency was not all that was needed, as a great expansion of educational provision took place between 1880 and 1902, to satisfy the needs of a rapidly increasing population.

The main features of the narrative, therefore, are the large scale provision of public elementary schools by the Board; the development of the Higher Grade Schools and of evening schools; the establishment of a system of centralised instruction for pupil-teachers; and the financial problems which arose out of the large scale provision required and the Board's attempts to obtain financial relief from the Town Council and from the Central Government.

---

(1) 1 June 1903 was the day, appointed by the Board of Education, when the Education Act 1902 should come into operation in Gateshead.

Also of interest are the foundation of a School of Art by the Town Council; the transference of certain Voluntary schools to board management and the disputes which developed in the 1880's over the opening of two Roman Catholic schools, one at Wrekenton and one at Park Lane.

Ancillary chapters deal with religious education and observance in the Board schools, the teaching staff, the Day Industrial School and with attendance at, and the curriculum of Board schools.

INTRODUCTION

Gateshead is an industrial town situated at the Northern extremity of the County of Durham on the South bank of the River Tyne, opposite to the City of Newcastle. For centuries, Gateshead contained 3,320 acres, but the Parliamentary Reform Act of 1832 gave the Borough an MP and added to it a further 180 acres in the Chapelry of Heworth.<sup>(1)</sup> For a further century until the boundary revision of 1932, Gateshead contained 3,500 acres, therefore, during the thirty-two years that the School Board held office, the Parliamentary and Municipal boundaries remained unchanged and were co-extensive with those of the school district.

In the early years of the 19th century the town of Gateshead was confined to an area along the river banks, about 10 furlongs from East to West and about 3 furlongs from North to South, with outlying villages within the Borough boundary at Low Fell, Sheriff Hill and Wrekenton.<sup>(2)</sup> From the mid 19th century onwards, the town gradually expanded to the south and west; so that the outlying villages are now physically joined to the rest of the town, which is effectively one unit.

Much of the expansion occurred in the period under review as a result of pressure from a rapidly increasing population. In 1801, Gateshead's population was 8,597.<sup>(3)</sup> Each census marked an

---

(1) L.C.1849, P.113-115 (For key to abbreviations used in footnotes see Pagei.a.).

(2) IBID.

(3) Official census figures are all from the Gateshead County Borough Official Year Book 1966-67.

increase and during the years of the School Board's existence the population grew steadily, being 48,627 in 1871; 65,845 in 1881; 85,692 in 1891; and reaching 109,888 in 1901. The most significant fact about the increase in population is that, although in the early 19th century the major increase in urban population was accounted for by immigration from rural areas, by mid-century the growth of urban population was largely a result of the increased birth rate within a town.<sup>(1)</sup> Educationally the effect was that the majority of the increased population had to be taught in the schools.

The Board's own census figures bear out the fact that a large and increasing number of children had to be provided for:

School Board Census 1871 - 1891<sup>(2)</sup>

Proportion of Children (3-13) to Population	Year	Aged 3 - 4	Aged 5 - 6	Aged 7 - 13	Total Children	Total Population
26.2	1871	2,774	2,550	6,586	11,880	45,281 *
26.3	1879	3,782	3,615	8,469	15,866	60,186
27.3	1885	4,220	4,051	10,736	19,007	69,738
27.7	1888	4,455	4,208	12,020	20,683	74,789
27.9	1891	-	-	-	23,831	85,692

\* 1871 Population figure is based on School Board's own estimate: therefore varies from official Census.

A large and increasing child population, for which school accommodation had to be provided, although not peculiar to Gateshead, does give some idea of the scale of provision required of the School

(1) J.W. House: North Eastern Population Movements. Department of Geography, King's College, University of Durham 1954. P.46.

(2) Figures 1871-1888 from S.B.M. Vol.C foll.P.163. Figures 1891 from S.B.M. Vol.K P.387.

Board to make good the deficiency in the school district. It must also be borne in mind that, although Voluntary provision increased in the 1870's and 1880's, from 1876<sup>(1)</sup> onwards the School Board was providing the increasingly larger percentage of the school places in the Borough.

Early historians testify that by the 19th century Gateshead was an industrial town. Mackenzie and Ross<sup>(2)</sup> record that the Borough contained chemical, glass, rope and twine works, iron<sup>(3)</sup> brass and copper foundries, shipyards and timberyards, millwrights and steam engine builders' premises, and flour and oil mills. Obviously some of these industries employed small numbers, but, in addition, coal mining, which had long been established in Gateshead, and agriculture, employed substantial numbers of the population.

Industry continued to hold its predominant position in Gateshead. In 1861, the number of males over twenty years of age, in certain selected occupations, in Gateshead was as follows:<sup>(4)</sup>

Agriculture	625
Shipbuilding	104
Chemical Manufacture	1,125
Coal Mining	1,853
Glass Manufacture	342
Iron Manufacture	767

---

(1) See Appendix No.8.

(2) Mackenzie. E & Ross M: "Historical and Descriptive View of the County Palatine of Durham" 1834 2 Vols. P.101 & 102.

(3) The best known was the works of Hawks & Co., which flourished from 1747 to 1889. S. Middlebrook: "Newcastle upon Tyne, Its Growth and Achievement" P.111 & 231.

(4) Selected from J.W. House "North Eastern Population Movements" App. Table 6.

As the century progressed the industrial character of the town changed. Chemical and iron manufacture ceased, glass manufacture declined and the heavy engineering works of Armstrong Whitworth & Co., Clarke Chapman & Co. and the North Eastern Railway repair shops became the major employers. Coal mining declined, but the coal carrying trade, established early in the century, was increased by the construction of the Dunston Staithes in 1893.<sup>(1)</sup> With the increasing demand for land within the Borough, agriculture declined as well. Although the last vestiges of farming can still be found today, the windmills, which gave their name to the hills overlooking the Tyne and signified a once prosperous corn trade, have long since disappeared.

Compared with other industrial towns, Gateshead was always poor. In 1870 its rateable value was only £110,385.<sup>(2)</sup> Although the rateable value increased to £194,000 in 1879<sup>(3)</sup> and reached £354,369 in 1900,<sup>(4)</sup> its percentage increase was less than that of the child population for which provision had to be made out of the rates.

Year	No. in Av. Attendance at Board Schools	% Increase	R.V.	% Increase
1879	4,045	-	£194,000	
1900	13,549	234.9%	£354,369	82.5

(1) S. Middlebrook: "Newcastle upon Tyne: Its Growth and Achievement" P.232.

(2) Appendix to 2 ND. TR 1879.

(3) IBID.

(4) 9th T.R. 1900. P.27.

From the table above it can be seen that the number of children in average attendance increased at nearly three times the rate of the rateable value, and it must be remembered that the number of children for which provision had to be made would be substantially higher than the number in average attendance. Great credit is therefore due to the Gateshead School Board for providing an efficient elementary education service on which the present system is based, while the school rate only increased by 70% from 10d in the £ in 1879 to 1/5d in the £ in 1900.

---

## CHAPTER I

### GATESHEAD SCHOOLS BEFORE 1870

The origins of education in Gateshead are obscure. The first school, if that be the right word, to be established in the town was c. 1340, when, it has been discovered, children of the parish were being taught by an anchoress through a hole in the wall of St. Mary's churchyard. Our present knowledge of the foundation is due to the researches of the Rev. James Raine who discovered, amongst the registers of the See of Durham, a licence granted by the Bishop, Richard D'Aungerville on November 14, 1340 to Dr. John Walwyn, Rector of Brancepeth.<sup>(1)</sup> Under the terms of the licence, the grantee was given permission to build a cell in St. Mary's Churchyard, Gateshead, provided a convenient place could be found and subject to the consent of the Rector of Gateshead. Such are the origins of the institution which became known as the Anchorage School.

There has always been some controversy over the reason why the school became known as the Anchorage. One view is that 'Anchorage' is a corruption of the word 'anchoress' and would suggest that the school had a continuous history from the 14th Century to its closure.<sup>(2)</sup> The other opinion held is that, in the

---

(1) Letter by H.H. Askew of Spennymoor: Gateshead Notes Vol. IV. P.120.

(2) View held by Fordyce "History and Antiquities of the County Palatine of Durham" Vol.II, P.770.

17th Century, the name 'Anchorage' was derived from the fact that the school was situated near to the river and close to the anchorage for ships at the Gateshead quay.<sup>(1)</sup> The weight of evidence would seem to point to the second view being correct, as from the 14th Century to the early 17th Century there is no record of the school's continuance.

The first direct reference to a school in the anchorage occurs in 1628 in the churchwarden's accounts where there is an entry:

"Lyme for the schoole 5s. 6d. "

It is safe to assume that this reference is to a school established, some time before 1628, in the precincts of St. Mary's, the parish church of Gateshead, as in 1657-58 the Anchorage in St. Mary's churchyard is mentioned as being used as a school with a minister, the Rev. J. Thompson, as Master.<sup>(2)</sup> Thompson was succeeded towards the end of the century by John Tennant. There was friction between Tennant and the Rector, the differences coming to a head in 1693. An entry in the parish register for November 2nd 1693 records the final chapter of the conflict:

"Whereas John Tennant, schoolmaster, teaches school in a certain room over ye vestrie of ye Church of St. Marie in Gateshead, known as the Anchorage, without the consent of and in opposition to Mr. George Tullie, Rector of ye said Parish, whom we conceive to have a right to place a schoolmaster in ye room above

- 
- (1) View held by Mackenzie E. "A Descriptive and Historical Account of the Town and County of Newcastle upon Tyne and the Borough of Gateshead 1827, P.756.
- (2) "The Schools of our Forefathers" J. Oxberry in Gateshead Schools and Education Week 1928, P.14.

mentioned we therefore, whose names are underwritten, at a vestrie meeting, ye day and yeare above specified, do in corroboration of ye said Rector's right, if need be join with him in displacing ye above mentioned John Tennant from teaching any further in ye aforesaid room." (1)

The entry is followed by the signatures of the Rector and thirteen members of the Four and Twenty, the ancient ruling body of Gateshead.

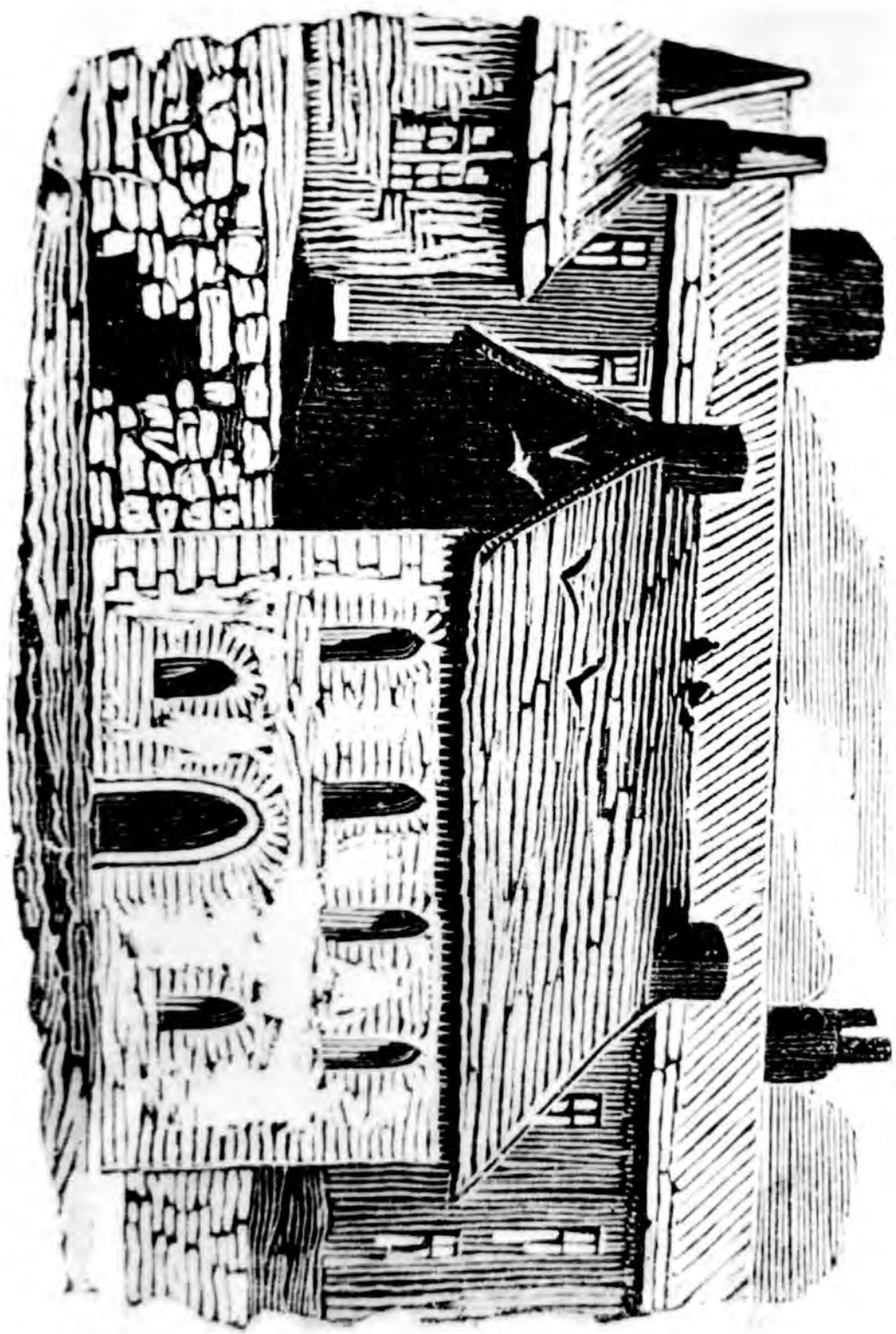
It is possible that the school moved as a result of the quarrel, as, seven years later, it was to be found at the Tollbooth in the High Street.

The Anchorage School, as distinct from a school in the Anchorage, dates from the early eighteenth century as on 9th January 1701, the Rector, The Reverend Theophilus Pickering D.D. bestowed £300, the profits of a colliery wrought by him out of a parcel of land known as Bull's Acre in the Parish of Gateshead (2) for:

"the purchase of some rent charge, if it may be had, or else for the purchase of some land, for the perpetual maintenance of a Free School in the said parish of Gateshead, the yearly revenue of which rent charge or land (except what is paid to the Lord of the Manor of Gateshead for the use of the Tollbooth) shall be the standing salary of the Master of the said Free School: and if the Tollbooth in the parish of Gateshead cannot be obtained or continued as a school for this purpose, and no other building be obtained or erected by any person or persons in as convenient a place or part of the town for this end and purpose ..... I doe hereby settle this, my gift of £300 upon the Anchorage adjoining the Parish Church of Gateshead. (3)

- 
- (1) "The Schools of our Forefathers" J.Oxberry in Gateshead Schools and Education Week 1928, P.14.  
 (2) "An Account of the Charitable Donations to the Poor of Gateshead" (1825) in the Poor and Charities of Gateshead.  
 (3) Brand's History of Newcastle, Vol.I, P.669.

The Tollbooth, High Street. At one time used as  
premises for the Anchorage School



The bequest of £300 was invested with Newcastle Corporation at 4% interest. The income of £12, so derived, together with £3 per year paid by the scholars (each scholar paying 1/- per year) produced a salary of £15 for the Master, who was appointed by the Rector of Gateshead.<sup>(1)</sup> In addition to the 60 fee paying scholars, the master was required to teach 15 scholars appointed by the Rector of Gateshead.<sup>(2)</sup>

By the terms of Dr. Pickering's bequest, the master was required to:

"teach or be ready to teach all the children of the Parish of Gateshead the Latin and Greek tongues: as also to write and cast up accounts and also the art of Navigation or Plain Sailing."<sup>(3)</sup>

The Anchorage school received a further endowment a few years later. A certain "Thomas Stephenson left to the use of the school founded by Dr. Pickering 40/- p.a.; and also other 40/- p.a. both payable out of a shop on the Tyne Bridge."<sup>(4)</sup>

The second sum left by Thomas Stephenson was to have been given by his brother, Hauxley, but, Hauxley having died, Thomas left it in his brother's memory. Although the date of Stephenson's bequest is not known, it must have been shortly after the school's foundation as Hauxley Stephenson was one of the trustees of Dr. Pickering's original deed of gift.<sup>(5)</sup> Unfortunately, the Stephenson endowments were lost when the property

---

(1) "An Account of the Charitable Donations to the Poor of Gateshead (1825) in The Poor and Charities of Gateshead.

(2) IBID.

(3) IBID.

(4) IBID.

(5) IBID.

was destroyed by the fall of the old Tyne Bridge in 1771.

Dr. Pickering himself appointed George Hudson as the master<sup>(1)</sup> of the newly organised school in January 1701. The length of his tenure is not known but he was succeeded by the Rev. John Powell who, in turn, was succeeded in 1757 by the Rev. John Spooner. The Rev. Busby was next master; once again a gap in the records prevents us knowing when he was appointed but in 1771 he was followed by the Rev. John Falcon, A.B. who was master for 38 years until 1809. His successor, the Rev. John Tyson, was only master for five years, until 1814, when the long succession of clerical masters was broken by the appointment of Mr. James Charlton. Mr. Charlton continued as master until 1839 but, because he did not enjoy good health in his later years, and because the school grew in numbers, he had, during his last few years, an assistant,<sup>(2)</sup> the Rev. William Bennett, who eventually succeeded him in 1839 and was master until 1855 or 56. Mr. Charlton died in 1840. The next master was the Rev. J.J. Day M.A. who afterwards became Vicar of Bensham; the last master, who was well-loved and remembered by his pupils, was the Rev. Philip Sankey, who held the post from approximately 1864 to 1878.

Little evidence is to be found of the school in the eighteenth century, but that it flourished and provided a much

- (1) List of Masters taken from "The Anchorage School" by Hetherington Nixon (March 1920) in Gateshead Scrap, Vol.IV, P.107.
- (2) Two other assistants, Robert Gillan and James Richardson are mentioned by Mackenzie E: A Descriptive and Historical Account of the Town and County of Newcastle upon Tyne and the Borough of Gateshead 1827, P.756.

needed education for the children of Gateshead, and possibly of a wider area, is certain.

More is known of the school's life in the nineteenth century. Two advertisements<sup>(1)</sup> by headmasters give us some idea of the curriculum. From the second we know that under Mr. Charlton the school took both boarders at £25 p.a. and day scholars for whom the fees varied. Prior to the appointment of the Rev. W. Bennett, as assistant, there is mention of another assistant master, the Rev. A.M. Bewsher A.M. of Trinity College, Dublin, who was one of the curates of St. Mary's and conducted the classical department in the school. Mr. Charlton must have been an authority in his own time as another contemporary advertisement informs us that there had been:

"lately published by Mames Charlton, Master of the Anchorage School, Gateshead, 'An Introduction to Geography and the Use of Globes': Price 3s. 6d. bound."<sup>(2)</sup>

The 12th edition of Tinwell's 'Practical Arithmetic With Book-keeping by Single Entry', corrected and enlarged by Charlton and two other books by him were also advertised. Copies of the geography, and arithmetic books are extant in Gateshead Central library and presumably the books were used in the Anchorage School.

Evidently there was some variety in the curriculum which could be followed at the Anchorage school as Mr. Charlton's advertisement lists various subjects that could be studied at varying scales of fees.<sup>(3)</sup> Perhaps the most interesting was reading, writing, arithmetic and book-keeping by single entry,

- 
1. Appendix No.1 (i) and (ii).
  2. Gateshead Observer, Vol.I, No.1, 18/11/37
  3. Appendix No.1 (ii).

with Latin and Greek languages, book-keeping by double entry, mensuration, gauging surveying of land, geography with the use of globes, algebra, Euclid's elements and plane trigonometry and spherical trigonometry at an inclusive fee of 21/- per qtr; a curious blend of classical, technical and commercial subjects. Mechanics, astronomy, navigation and differential calculus could also be studied for 10/6d per year.

The Anchorage flourished in the nineteenth century and obviously was a school with a good reputation as is witnessed by the number of pupils attending and by the names of some of the pupils there. In 1827 there were approximately 90 scholars, including 15 free scholars.<sup>(1)</sup> In 1834 there were about 100 scholars, including the free ones,<sup>(2)</sup> while in the 1860's the master's salary was quoted as being £12 from the endowment and £136 from fees;<sup>(3)</sup> an indication that the number of scholars was still high. The school's reputation may be established by the fact that it included, among its scholars, numerous boys who became ministers of the established church and the future Rt. Hon. Edward Short K.C., one of the M.P's for Newcastle and Home Secretary from 1919 to 1922.<sup>(4)</sup> He went to the school in 1873. Charles Dobson, grandson of Dobson the Architect, went to the school in 1874.<sup>(5)</sup>

---

(1) Gateshead Scraps Vol.IV, P.108-109.

(2) IBID.

(3) Gateshead Schools and Education Week. 1928, P.16.

(4) Gateshead Scraps Vol.IV, P.187.

(5) IBID.

An important incident in the school's history occurred on 6th October 1854, when an explosion and fire, at a nearby chemical works, badly damaged its premises in the Vestry of St. Mary's Church. As a result, the school moved temporarily to the schoolroom of St. Edmund's Church. The original premises were thoroughly repaired and restored; the opportunity being taken of effecting:

"Several judicious alterations and improvements."

The work was carried out under the direction of John Dobson, the well known Newcastle Architect.<sup>(1)</sup>

About 1876, the school was renovated, but its life was drawing to a close. The headmaster, the Rev. P. Sankey, was taken ill and the school was closed in 1878. The Rector of Gateshead was unable to find any competent master, clerical or lay, who would undertake for £12 p.a. and the revocable tenancy of the schoolroom, to give the boys a free education and to conduct the school. The furniture was purchased from Mr. Sankey and in 1886<sup>(2)</sup> the income converted to paying the fees annually of about 6 children in St. Mary's National School.

Obviously a school which provided the advanced form of education available at the Anchorage School was not a public elementary school and it is doubtful whether a writing school

---

(1) Gateshead Scraps Vol.IV, P.2.

(2) S.B.M. Vol.G, P.265.

was ever established in connection with the Anchorage,<sup>(1)</sup> but there can be no doubt that the second school of importance, the National School, established in Gateshead in 1808, was both public and elementary.

The Rev. John Hodgson, historian of Northumberland and then curate of Gateshead, is reported as saying<sup>(2)</sup> that at the commencement of 1808, a letter was sent to Dr. Prosser, the Rector, suggesting the establishment of a school, on the lines popularised by Bell and Lancaster, intended for children of parents whose incomes were limited and precarious. Dr. Prosser left Gateshead shortly afterwards, but others took up the idea, subscriptions were obtained, and on September 5th 1808 in the 'Long Room' of an inn known as Methuen's at the foot of High Street, Gateshead's first National School was opened.

Very soon there were 250 scholars under instruction and the premises were found to be inadequate. Therefore, in August 1810, the school moved to the Chapel School at St. Edmund's church; a new building to be used as a week day and a Sunday school. All the children of the Parish could be admitted to this school at 6 years of age on the payment of 1d per week.<sup>(3)</sup>

The school was built, at a cost of £1,213<sup>(4)</sup> by means of donations, loans and collections at charity sermons which

---

(1) M.G. Mason. M.Ed Thesis "History of Elementary Education on Tyneside Before 1870" University of Durham 1954, P.36

(2) Gateshead Schools and Education Week 1928, P.16.

(3) IBID P.89.

(4) Report of the Committee of Gateshead New School for Year Ending Sept. 5th 1811. Appended to Gateshead Schools and Education Week 1928. P.89.

Report of Committee of Gateshead New School for  
Year Ending 5th September, 1811.

totalled £1231. 2. 6 $\frac{1}{4}$ d; thus the treasurer was left with a credit balance of just over £17. The building debt was cleared by 1811. Shortly after the school was constructed, several persons who had advanced loans towards the building of the school, gave their loans to the school.<sup>(1)</sup> The amount of these donations, increased by interest and a surplus of annual subscriptions to £300, was invested at 4% and the interest, amounting to £12 p.a. was applied towards payment of the master's salary of £75 p.a; the deficiency being made up from annual subscriptions and a 1d a week paid by each boy in the school. The girls were taught by a mistress, whose salary was paid by the weekly fees of the girls and a subscription entered into, for the purpose, by several ladies of the parish.<sup>(2)</sup>

The curriculum was reading, writing, arithmetic and a course of religious instruction<sup>(3)</sup>

In 1811 the number of scholars reported as being in regular attendance was about 100,<sup>(4)</sup> but by 1816 the number had risen to 350; 220 boys and 130 girls.<sup>(5)</sup> The school continued to flourish until the Rev. John Davies came to Gateshead as Rector in 1840. Davies was dissatisfied with the existing accommodation and set about raising funds for a new school. Cuthbert Ellison Esq., gave some land in Ellison Terrace, for the new school, which was built at Barn Close to hold 450 pupils.

- 
- (1) "An Account of the Charitable Donations to the Poor of Gateshead" 1825. The Poor and Charities of Gateshead.  
 (2) ~~IBID.~~  
 (3) Report of the Committee of Gateshead New School for Year Ending Sept. 5th 1811. Appended to Gateshead Schools and Education week 1928, P.89.  
 (4) As note (3). (5) As Note (1).



A contemporary newspaper advertisement<sup>(1)</sup> gives us the date of the opening of the new school.

"The children attending St. Edmund's Chapel School will be removed on Tuesday next, 22 November 1842, to the new National School Rooms, Ellison Terrace, Gateshead. They will meet at the new schoolrooms at eleven o'clock and be examined."

The school settled into its new premises and continued to thrive. In 1856 it had over 500 children in attendance, 200 boys, 160 girls and 150 infants.<sup>(2)</sup>

After 1870, the school was enlarged and it continued to serve the Borough until after the second world war.

The next voluntary school to be established in Gateshead town was under the auspices of the British and Foreign Schools Society. Once again a contemporary news cutting provides the information.

"A 'British School' will shortly be established in the commodious room beneath the Primitive Methodist Chapel<sup>(3)</sup> in this borough. The British and Foreign School Society have made a grant of the requisite material for commencing the school and will send down a properly qualified master. The doors will be open to all, without discretion of sect or party, and we trust the institution will receive the support of the inhabitants"<sup>(4)</sup>

A later note tells us that the school opened with upwards of 100 boys, that a Mr. Parker was the Master and that it was hoped to open a similar school for girls.<sup>(5)</sup> A further note informs us

---

(1) L.C. 1842, P.192.

(2) Report of National Schools 1856 in Gateshead Schools and Education Week 1928, P.99.

(3) Grosvenor Street.

(4) L.C. 1840, P.16.

(5) L.C. 1840, P.44.

that the school actually opened on the 31 August 1840 and that the average attendance had increased to 200; 160 being present for examination.<sup>(1)</sup> The same note shows that the school's finances were not sound, there being a deficit of £35. 0. 2d. on the first year.

A girls school was obviously opened, as in 1842 the average attendance was given as 270 - 160 boys and 110 girls, but the deficit had increased to £40.<sup>(2)</sup> The fees charges were 2d per week and an interesting feature was that the school had a library.<sup>(3)</sup>

In 1843 it was decided to form a higher class of 24 boys who would pay 6d per week in fees; eight boys of proved worth were to be admitted at the original 2d fee. In addition to the ordinary subjects they would learn "English, history, mathematics, geography and drawing".<sup>(4)</sup> The school committee hoped that such a class "would prove a stimulus to the boys and raise the character of the school in the estimation of the parents."<sup>(5)</sup>

Finance continued to be a problem. Mr. R.H. Haggie,<sup>(6)</sup> the Chairman of the Committee, often had to "dip into his own pocket."<sup>(7)</sup> to keep the school running. However, in February 1844, a gigantic bazaar was held to raise funds for the school;

---

(1) L.C 1841, P.104. (2) L.C.1842, P.109. (3) IBID.

(4) L.C: 1843, P.14 & 15. (5) IBID.

(6) A prominent manufacturer of the firm R. Hood Haggie, Rope Makers.

(7) L.C. 1844, P.10.

it succeeded in raising £233. 1. 10.<sup>(1)</sup> Later in the same year the Committee decided to try to raise funds for a new building.

There is no evidence of a new building being erected, but the school certainly moved, as in 1851<sup>(2)</sup> it is listed as being in Brunswick Terrace with J.B. Tallack Esq. as master.

No further record of the school is to be found and it had certainly ceased to function by 1870; probably for lack of financial support.

The only other British School to be established in Gateshead, was near to the river, in an outlying part of the town known as Friar's Goose. Although established earlier than the British School in Grosvenor Street, it was not really a public school, being established within the precincts of the chemical works for the children of employees.

In 1839, Friar's Goose Educational Society's Report was mentioned in a news cutting<sup>(3)</sup> which stated, with reference to the school, that:

"The working classes (we are told) are not only alive to the importance of education, but able to endow their schools with means sufficient for their support."

From this evidence and the mention of indoor subscription, in the annexed accounts,<sup>(4)</sup> which presumably

(1) L.C. 1844, P.14.

(2) Hagar & Co's Directory of Co. Durham 1851, P.393.

(3) Gateshead Observer 30/11/39.

(4) IBID.

referred to subscriptions collected inside the works; it is reasonable to assume that the workers themselves raised most of the funds for the upkeep of the school.

	£.	s.	d.
"Balance last year	19.	10.	10
Amount of indoor subscriptions	130.	17.	6
Outdoor ditto	9.	0.	6
Fines Library		8.	6
			<hr/>
	159.	17.	4
Expenditure	110.	10.	9½
			<hr/>
Balance	49.	6.	6½ "

Two interesting features of the school were that it had a library and a thriving evening school. We are told that there were 213 books in the library and issues for the year had been 560.<sup>(1)</sup> The evening school had 47 pupils; 15 young men, 5 young women, 19 boys and 8 girls, and an average attendance of 30. The day school had 106 pupils; 58 boys and 48 girls, with an average attendance of 90.<sup>(2)</sup>

Little else is known about the Friar's Goose School, but in 1845, it is included in the list of schools examined, but not under inspection.<sup>(3)</sup> The Inspector reported that the discipline was very imperfect; that progress was very fair, although it was greater in writing and arithmetic than in scripture catechism, and that "the master was unwearied in his work."

---

(1) Gateshead Observer 30/11/39.

(2) IBID.

(3) C of C on Ed. Report 1845 "Report of Rev. Fred Watkins on Schools in Northern Districts."

In 1847, Alex Mcdonal was listed as master<sup>(1)</sup> and in 1865 T. Elliott and Miss A.M. Selkirk were the teachers.<sup>(2)</sup> The school is listed in 1871 as having 163 pupils in average attendance and as receiving £111. 1. 0 in grant.<sup>(3)</sup> However the school did not long survive the formation of the School Board as on 20th Jan. 1871<sup>(4)</sup> the Board was informed in a letter from J.C. Stevenson Esq., of the Jarrow Chemical Works, that the Friar's Goose school would shortly be discontinued because the premises were inadequate and the school was too small to attract a qualified master.

Another voluntary school established in Gateshead, prior to 1870, was known alternatively as St. Cuthbert's or Lady Vernon's. The school was opened in 1855, as a National School, having been built at the expense of Cuthbert Ellison Esq. in memory of his daughter, Lady Vernon, on land, donated by H.W. Askew Esq., near to St. Cuthbert's church in Bensham.<sup>(5)</sup> The school accommodated 160 pupils; in 1868 and 1885 it was enlarged and in 1891 a new boys' school was added by Lord Northbourne, in memory of his wife, another daughter of Cuthbert Ellison.<sup>(6)</sup>

In the 1890's the complete group of schools - girls' boys' and infants' held over 1,000 pupils.<sup>(7)</sup>

Of the five schools already mentioned, the Anchorage

- 
- (1) F. White & Co's Directory of Newcastle & Gateshead 1847, P.266  
 (2) Ward's Directory of Newcastle & Gateshead 1865-66, P.308.  
 (3) C of C on Ed Report 1871. (4) S.B.M. Vol.A, P.39.  
 (5) Gateshead Schools and Education Week 1928. (6) IBID.  
 (7) Kelly's Directory of Newcastle & Gateshead 1894.

school was providing education at a level higher than elementary and therefore did not come within the scope of the 1870 Act; the two British schools had either been, or were about to be, discontinued and only St. Mary's National and Lady Vernon's were providing public elementary education within the meaning of the Act.

There were several other schools making similar provision, which can be divided into four categories. First of all there were three schools established just prior to 1870. The first was the Wesleyan school for 750 pupils, built in 1862;<sup>(1)</sup> the second was the Abbot Memorial Industrial School, established in 1868, which provided education and instruction for 100 boys and 50 girls of the "destitute and unfortunate class".<sup>(2)</sup> In addition to the 3 R's, the boys were taught shoe-making, tailoring and mat making and the girls, sewing, knitting and domestic occupations. The third school was the one in the Workhouse.

The second category comprised four small National Schools; the Gateshead Infants and Sunday School in Ellison Street and those at High Fell, Low Fell and Wrekenton.

A third category consisted of the two Roman Catholic schools in the Borough, St. Joseph's and Our Lady and St. Wilfred's.

---

(1) Kelly's Directory of Newcastle and Gateshead 1894.

(2) IBID.

The final group consisted of one school, St. James's Chapel school, which closed soon after the Board was formed. For that reason it was excluded from the Board's considerations when calculating the deficiency of school places.

In addition to the public elementary schools, provided by voluntary agencies, there were in Gateshead in 1871, twenty-six private adventure schools<sup>(1)</sup> in which the ordinary fee was less than 9d per week, providing accommodation for approximately 1,000 children. There is also evidence in local directories of other private schools, but presumably they were not classed as elementary schools since they are excluded from the Board's return to the Education Department.<sup>(2)</sup> Some of the private elementary schools were very small; the largest having 98 on its roll. The instruction provided was not always of a high standard; the premises were often inadequate and the life of the schools was transient; depending as they did on one master or mistress, the private adventure schools usually closed when the owner moved, retired, or died.

However, there is evidence in directories that some private adventure schools survived the foundation of the School Board, while others were started and functioned, throughout the period 1870 - 1902, with varying degrees of success.

---

(1) Appendix No.3(i).

(2) IBID.

**St. James Chapel School**

The private elementary schools<sup>(1)</sup> of J.N. Plumpton Esq. and W.J. Short Esq. listed in the Board's return were still listed in 1874 - 80<sup>(2)</sup> and 1883 - 84.<sup>(3)</sup> Of the other private schools, the most important was the private school kept by Mrs. E.C. Taylor, at 11 Liddell Terrace, which was listed in 1865 - 66<sup>(4)</sup> and was still listed 40 years later in 1905 - 06.<sup>(5)</sup> Other schools of importance were those held by J. Fenwick Esq. at 20, Bloomfield Terrace from about 1856 to about 1894<sup>(6)</sup> and by the Rev. J.P. Saybourne in Union Lane from 1874 - 1894.<sup>(7)</sup>

There is also evidence that the demise of the principal did not always occasion the demise of the school. A Mrs. E.S. Borlage held a school at 100, High Street, from approximately 1879 to 1888<sup>(8)</sup> then a Miss C. Borlase, presumably a relative, is listed in 1889 - 80<sup>(9)</sup> but does not appear again. Similarly, Miss E. Russell held a school, at 38, St. Edmund's Terrace, from approximately 1883 to 1890, and a Miss A.I. Morritts is listed in the directories as continuing the school in the same premises up to 1900.

A number of other schools were started and failed, presumably because of mounting competition from the Board and Voluntary schools and the advent of free education. The only one worthy of note was a short-lived venture by Miss E.L. Connell,

---

(1) Appendix No.3(i). (2) Ward's Directory 1879-80. (3) IBID 1883-84.  
 (4) Ward's Directory 1865-66. (5) IBID 1906-07.  
 (6) School listed in successive directories of the period.  
 (7) IBID. (8) Ward 1879-80; 1883-84; 1885-86; 1887-88.  
 (9) Ward 1889-90.

at 3, Shaftesbury Avenue, in 1889-90.<sup>(1)</sup> It is of interest because Miss Connell, a colourful character, was at that time a member of the School Board. In 1877<sup>(2)</sup> she was appointed as headmistress of Redheugh Board School<sup>(3)</sup> and subsequently served as headmistress of Durham Road School. In June 1885, however, she was removed from her position. The Board minute reads:

"..... after careful consideration Miss Connell of Durham Road be removed and that she be offered the position of headmistress of Windmill Hills Infant School." (4)

What had occasioned the removal is not stated, but the implication is that the Board's action was taken for disciplinary reasons. Miss Connell did not take up the new position and in September 1885 another mistress was appointed.

A School Board election was impending and in November 1885, Miss Connell was elected to the Board; a position she held until 1894. The Rev. W. Moore Ede, wrote of her appointment, referring to the unpopularity of the Board members with a certain section of the voters:

"Fortunately for us a lady, an ex-teacher, stood as a candidate ..... and so captured the imagination of the average voter that she attracted to herself all the discontented voters.

The result was that the lady came in, at the head of the poll, with thousands of votes to spare and

(1) Ward's Directory of Newcastle and Gateshead 1889-90.

(3) In 1882 she was reprimanded by her Managers for inexact form filling, S.B.M. Vol.E, P.111.

(4) S.B.M. Vol.E, P.336.

all the old members followed in due order."<sup>(1)</sup>

From the number of schools mentioned, it would seem that the school provision in Gateshead from voluntary and private sources, at the time of the Elementary Education Act 1870, was quite generous, but the number of places available or contemplated in the above mentioned elementary schools, 4,111, compared to the total population of 45,281, was not sufficient to meet the needs of the town. The location of the schools in the Borough and the distribution of places in the various types of school, boys, girls, and infants, were also unsatisfactory as a disproportionate number of places were for infants and most of the schools were to be found in the old part of the town, away from the soon to be expanding areas in Bensham, Teams, Deckham and Low Fell. The Corporation of Gateshead, therefore, lost no time in putting into effect the powers granted to it by the 1870 Act, to elect a School Board; the first of which was duly elected on 28 November 1870.

---

(1) News Cutting 23/10/30. "Reminiscences of Rev. W. Moore Ede on his days in Gateshead." 1881-1908 in Gateshead Scraps Vol.I, P.131.

CHAPTER II

The First School Board

The Election

As soon as the 1870 Act became effective, the Corporation of Gateshead took action to elect a school board for the Borough. The first step was to make a survey of the town to ascertain the extent of the deficiency which existed. Having ascertained the deficiency, the Corporation organised an election of board members, which was held on Monday 28th November 1870.<sup>(1)</sup> Eleven members<sup>(2)</sup> were elected as follows from 46 candidates:

(3)	Posn.	Name	Religion	Votes
	1.	RILEY, Rev. Henry	R.C.	4,696
	2	ATKINSON, Rev. Samuel	C. of E.	3,692
	3	MONTGOMERY, Wm. Geo	R.C.	3,400
	4	PREST, Ven. the Rev. Edward	C. of E.	3,279
	5	LUCAS, John	Methodist	2,855
	6	LUCAS, George	Unitarian	2,453
	7	ALLHUSEN, Henry Christian	C. of E.	2,288
	8	BROWN, William	Wesleyan	2,199
	9	FRANCE, Geo. Thornton	C. of E.	1,941
	10	REDMAYNE, Robt. Robey	C. of E.	1,651
	11	NEWALL, Robt. Stirling	C. of E.	1,601

- 
- (1) Only the school boards of Manchester, Liverpool and Rochdale were elected earlier on 24th, 25th and 26th November respectively.
- (2) 1870 Act, Clause 31 said that a school board should consist of not less than five or more than fifteen members to be fixed by the Education Department. The number of members could be revised by a resolution of the school board, and approved by the Education Dept. number raised to fifteen on 15 July 1897.
- (3) Newcastle Daily Journal 29 Nov. 1870. For members of later Boards see Appendix No.4.

Accounts of the election in the Newcastle Daily Journal and the Newcastle Daily Chronicle show that religious issues were in the forefront of the election. As one can see, the result was a victory for the church party with six members; the Roman Catholics secured two seats and the non conformists three. The papers also tell us that several of the men elected had been connected with the management of schools. About one third of the burgesses and the election cost the ratepayers £197. 8. 2d.

Normally a school board should have been formed under Section 10 of the 1870 Act, after careful enquiry by the officers of the Education Department, but the action of the Corporation in conducting the initial survey and electing a school board overcame the need for such an enquiry.

#### The Board in Action

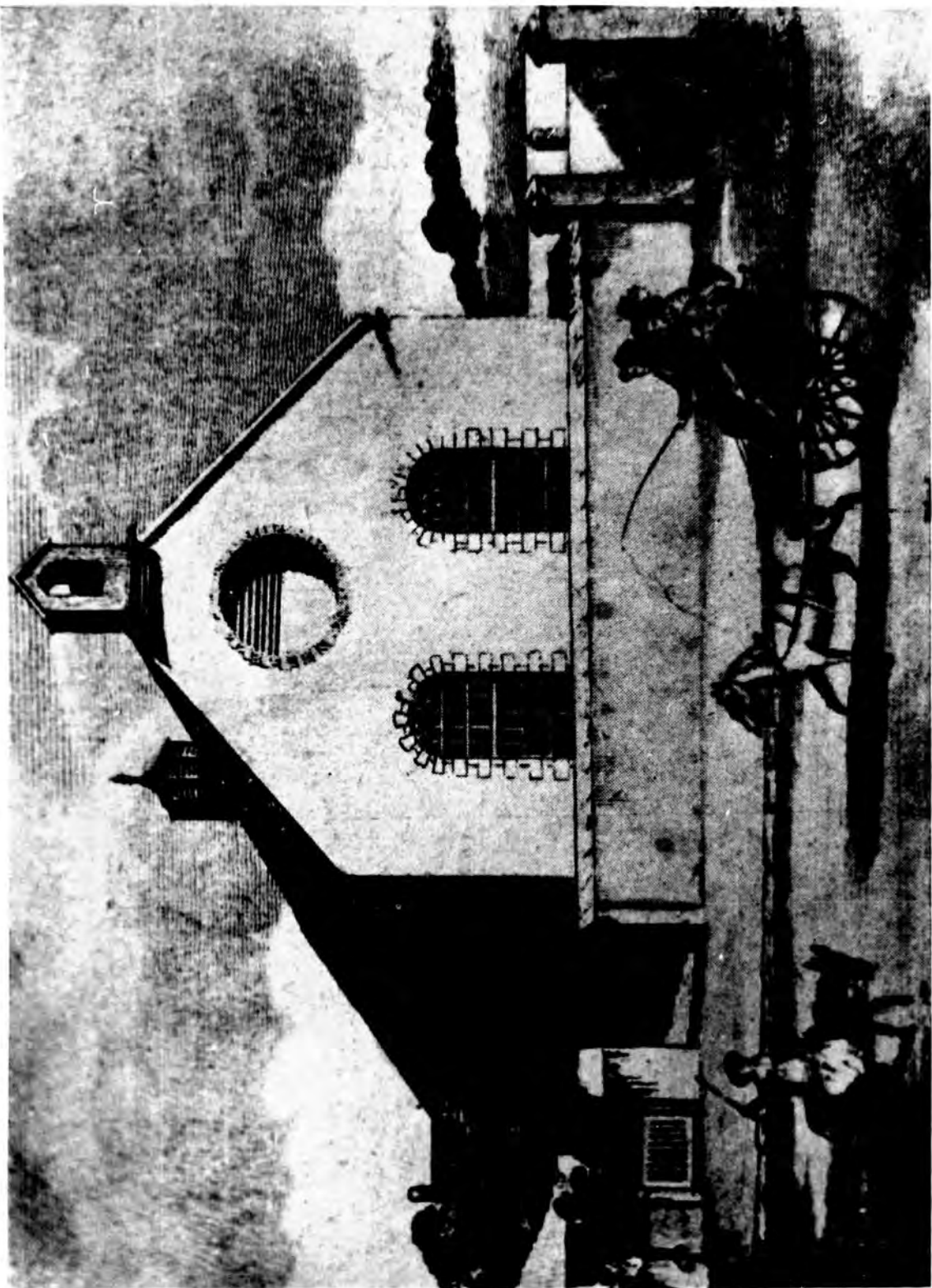
The Board met for the first time on Thursday, 15th December at the Committee Room in the Town Hall, when the following officers were elected: (1)

R.S. Newall	Chairman
Ven.the Rev. E. Prest	Vice Chairman
Joseph Willis Swinburne (Solicitor & Town Clerk of Gateshead)	Clerk

Other business decided at the meeting was that a quorum should consist of five members and that the School Board should meet

---

(1) S.B.M. Vol.A. P8. For list of subsequent officials see Appendices 4 & 5.



on the second Wednesday of every month.<sup>(1)</sup> The following letter was also read to the Board:

"Gentlemen,

Understanding that you will require a treasurer I beg to apply for the appointment, feeling sure that I can give all the attention requisite for the proper discharge of the duties of the office. Having the honour to be the first manager of the first bank<sup>(2)</sup> established in Gateshead my position is well-known to be such as to keep me always at hand and accessible.

I mention this as it may be a point of great importance that your treasurership should devolve upon some person who can be easily approached.

I am Gentlemen

Yours respectfully,

John Peirson      "(3)

The appointment of the treasurer was deferred until the second meeting, on 11th January 1871, when Mr. Peirson was appointed in preference to a second applicant, Mr. S.J. Humble.<sup>(4)</sup>

At the second meeting the Board turned to the task for which it had been elected - educational provision. The Clerk, at the first meeting, had been instructed to furnish abstracts of returns submitted by elementary schools in the Borough and a map of the Borough showing existing schools. A letter, dated 20 Dec. 1870, from the Education Department was read out congratulating the Board on the expedition with which the Town Council had formed it, following the preliminary enquiry into the provision of elementary school places in August 1870. The letter went on to request a return from the School

---

(1) Permission was obtained from the Corporation to hold the meetings in the Town Hall Committee Room.

(2) The National Provincial Bank.

(3) S.B.M. Vol.A, P.12.

(4) IBID P.24

Board showing: (1)

"(1) The number of children within the municipal limits for whom means of Elementary Education should be provided:-

- (a) between 3 & 5
- (b) between 5 & 13

(2) The provision to meet these requirements which the School Board consider to be:-

- (a) already supplied by efficient schools
- (b) likely to be supplied by schools either contemplated or in the course of erection.

(3) The deficiency (if any) in the supply of efficient Elementary Education for the Borough as shown by comparing (1) and (2).

(4) By what means the School Board would propose to supply the deficiency.

(5) The precise localities in which schools would be needed".

The return <sup>(2)</sup> had to be in three schedules giving the name,

description, situation, superficial and cubical area and attendance

of each school which the Board proposed to classify as:

" I Supplying efficient elementary education

- (a) Schools now in receipt of annual grants.
- (b) Schools not receiving such grants but which will become elementary schools and will seek aid.
- (c) Schools which will seek aid.
- (d) Private Adventure Schools to which no grants can be made."

" II Not supplying efficient education"

Here the Board had to list schools or buildings

(1) S.B.M. Vol.A.P25.

(2) See Appendices Nos. 3 & 6.

which with improvements might be recognised as efficient and to point out the steps recommended for making them so.

" III The number of Schools required to complete the School supply of the Borough"

The above information could not be given immediately, so on 11 January 1871 the Board appointed a Census Committee <sup>(1)</sup> to obtain the necessary facts. The Committee, having divided the town into three wards, reported back on 8 February 1871 as follows:

(2)

Ward	Ages of Children				Total Population
	3 & 4	5 & 6	7 - 13	Total 3 - 13	
East	838	800	2,017	3,655	13,786
South	1,080	1,027	2,562	4,669	17,151
West	826	723	2,007	3,556	14,254
Totals	2,744	2,550	6,586	11,880	45,281

However, by March 1871 the Board based its return to the Education Department <sup>(3)</sup> on the revised figures given below, and it was upon these figures that estimates of schools required were based:

(4)

Children	4 - 5	5 - 7	7-13	Total
Total in Gateshead	1,372	2,550	6,586	10,508
Deduct 10% for Children of Upper Classes	137	255	658	1,050
Balance	1,235	2,295	5,928	9,458
Deduct 15% for Absentees	185	344	888	1,417
Balance	1,050	1,951	5,040	8,041

(1) Members Vice-Chairman Messrs J. Lucas & R.R. Redmayne  
S.B.M. Vol.A. P30.

(2) IBID P41.

(3) See Appendix No.6.

(4) S.B.M. Vol.A.P47.

The deductions of 10% for children of the upper classes<sup>(1)</sup> and 15% for absentees are self-explanatory, but the reason that only children between 4-5 are considered in the second table is that the 1871 Code, which became known after the February report, prevented children under 4 from receiving grants, and the Board arrived at the total figure of 1,372 aged between 4-5 by simply halving the number (2,744) between 3-5 in the first table.

The next step was to find out where the new schools would be required and what type of schools they would have to be. To do this, the Board appointed a Localities Committee<sup>(2)</sup> on 8 February 1871. Its findings,<sup>(3)</sup> based on the second table above, were that there were 8,041 children of school age in Gateshead (1,050 between 4-5, and 6,991 between 7-13) and that in 1871 only 4,111 places<sup>(4)</sup> were being provided or were in the course of erection in efficient accommodation, resulting in a deficiency of 3,930.<sup>(5)</sup>

The Board therefore proposed that the following schools or groups of schools should be built: a school or group of schools for 1,300 pupils in the North Eastern district of the town; a school or group of schools for 1,050 pupils to the South of Gateshead Cemetery; a school to the South of the colliery at Sheriff Hill for 500 pupils; a school or group of schools near Prince Consort Road for 675 pupils; and finally a school or group of schools to the East of the Water Company's pump between Askew Road and Windmill Hills for about 400 pupils.<sup>(6)</sup>

---

(1) Those who could pay more than 9d per week in fees.

(2) Members - Whole Board less Mr. Redmayne. (3) See Appendix No.4.

(4) Nationally, schools under Government Inspection were providing 1,878,000 places in 1870, little over half the estimated requirements. Smith, A History of English Elementary Education 1760-1902. P.285.

(5) This figure would possibly be reduced after Government Inspection of private Venture schools providing 1,000 places.

(6) S.B.M. Vol.A. P.49.

The Board, having completed its return, had to wait for Education Department approval, which was not given until 9 August 1871. Action was further prevented by the Department's refusal, on 8 March 1871, to lend an inspector to the Gateshead Board.<sup>(1)</sup> to inspect the private venture schools, and their request for the Board to proceed with its own investigations. The Board again requested help and finally, on 20 May 1871, Mr. H.E. Oakley, H.M.I. intimated that he would soon be visiting Gateshead to inspect the private adventure schools.<sup>(2)</sup>

In 1871, Mr. Oakley informed the Board that he had reported to the Education Department, and an Education Department letter of 20 July 1871, which was considered at the Board Meeting on 9 August, informed the Board that a requisition for the new schools would shortly be issued.<sup>(3)</sup>

On 23 August another letter from the Education Department was received, stating that a formal requisition could not be issued for some time, but giving the Board permission to begin work on the new schools immediately under Section 19 of the 1870 Act.

The Board's reaction was immediate; a Schools Sites Committee<sup>(4)</sup> was set up, that day, to examine possible sites for the new schools.

---

(1) A request had been made to this effect on 25 Jan. 1871.

(2) S.B.M. Vol.A, P.64.

(3) IBID, P.74.

(4) In December 1872 three Permanent Committees - Building, Finance and School Management - were set up. S.B.M. Vol.A, P.229.

CHAPTER IIISchool Provision - 1871-79

Prior to receipt of the Education Department's approval the Clerk had been authorised on 12 July 1871 to make enquiries about land which would be available for school building. Approaches were made to several landowners and replies were received from Sir Walter James, Mr. S.J. Kenmuir and the Corporation of Gateshead. The School Sites Committee considered the proposals and recommended that the following sites should be acquired on the terms stated: <sup>(1)</sup>

- "(1) A piece of ground containing  $1\frac{1}{2}$  acres having a frontage to Alexandra Road, Ely Street, Back Bewick Road and Back Lichfield Street to be purchased from Sir Walter and Lady James, at the price of £800.<sup>(2)</sup>
- (2) A piece of ground containing about 8,400 square yards having frontages on Prior Street, Eldon Street and Back Abbot Street price 5/- per square yard (£2,100), Vendor Mr. Kenmuir.
- (3) A piece of ground forming about 2 acres on the south side of Gateshead Cemetery, having a frontage to an intended 30 foot road on the north side and an approach from Cross Street and the cemetery footpath - Vendors the Corporation of Gateshead at a price of £800".<sup>(3)</sup>

The committee also recommended consideration of a site in the Askew Road - Windmill Hills area; a recommendation which was not pursued.

On 21st September 1871 the Schools Sites Committee reported that each school should be one storey in height,<sup>(4)</sup> that separate departments should be built for Boys, Girls and Infants, that no

---

(1) S.B.M. Vol A. P.86.

(2) The market price was £1,200 but Sir Walter James (later Lord Northbourne) reduced the cost. In 1891 he built an extension (Lady Northbourne's) to Lady Vernon's School in Bensham at his own cost in memory of his wife.

(3) Negotiations for purchase began in 1874. In Nov. 1876 Board decided to abandon site as insuitable and to erect a school on a site in Sunderland Road nearer to developing centre of population.

teachers residence should be provided and that the plans should be open to public competition.<sup>(1)</sup> A successful amendment proposed by the Vice Chairman sought to add 50 places to the Boys' and Girls' departments and five places to the Infants' department in the central district. The table of proposed school provision submitted by the Committee was as follows:<sup>(2)</sup>

	Central	N.East	West	East Central	South	Total
Boys Over 7	100	310	170	270	130	980
Girls Over 7	100	350	180	290	150	1,070
Infants Under 7	215	640	320	480	220	1,875
Total	* 415	1,300	670	1,040	500	3,925

\* For amended figures add 50 to Boys, 50 to Girls, and 5 to Infants, giving total of 520.

The committee's recommendations were all accepted and advertisements placed for architects' tenders. Many entries were received for the competition in the Autumn of 1871. The entries of Messrs. Ross & Lamb for the Alexandra Road group of schools, and of Thomas Oliver for the other groups were selected at two extraordinary meetings on 16th and 17th November 1871.<sup>(3)</sup> Certain alterations to the plans were required by the School Board, and on the 13 December 1871 the Clerk was instructed to ask the architects to complete the alterations as quickly as possible. Finally, on 10th January 1872 the Board decided to advertise for Contractors' tenders so that the work of school provision could commence.

---

(1) S.B.M. Vol A P.85.

(2) IBID.

(3) S.B.M. Vol A P.102.

Temporary Schools 1872 - 1876

Although, by February 1872, the preparations for the new schools were going ahead as quickly as could be expected, the School Board realised that there would be an inevitable delay before the necessary loans could be obtained and the schools built and ready for use, therefore the School Board turned its attention to the possible provision of temporary schools, with the twin aims of immediately providing urgently needed school places and of subsequently providing a nucleus of pupils who could be transferred to the permanent schools when they opened.

The original suggestion mooted on 14th February was to use the Workhouse School, but negotiations with the Poor Law Guardians fell through in March, as the Board did not think the school suitable and the Guardians did not wish to let it. <sup>(1)</sup>

The Temporary Schools Committee <sup>(2)</sup> was instructed to advertise for other suitable premises. An encouraging response was received as regards the quantity if not the quality of the premises available, and on 10 April 1872 the Board considered the following six premises: some rooms in the Mechanics' Institute in West Street, the Alexandra Hall in High Street, the High Level Road Wesleyan Schoolroom, the schoolroom under the Bethesda Chapel in Melbourne Street, some premises in Warwick Street and the schoolroom under the United Methodist Chapel, Sheriff Hill. <sup>(3)</sup> The Committee recommended

---

(1) S.B.M. Vol.A. P.124.

(2) Formed 14th February 1872 Members, Chairman, Vice Chairman Messrs. W. Brown, G. Lucas, R.R. Redmayne.

(3) S.B.M. Vol.A. P.127-130.

that the High Level Road schoolroom, the Bethesda schoolroom and the Sheriff Hill schoolroom should be further considered. They were and the local H.M.I. was asked to inspect the premises. Mr. Oakley's assistant actually visited the premises with the Committee and none of his reports was entirely favourable. The School Board therefore accepted the fact that the Bethesda and Sheriff Hill schoolrooms were unsuitable, but decided to press forward with a temporary school in the High Level Road premises, which had been reported as suitable, subject to certain alterations to the ventilation and sanitation. (1)

The next step was to appoint a headmaster. After advertisements had been placed and applications received, Mr. R.A. Bowler, certificated teacher from Darlington, was appointed with effect from 22 July 1872 at a salary of £100 with  $\frac{1}{3}$  of the government grant, the contract to be terminated by three months notice on either side. (2) His staff was to comprise one assistant master and two pupil teachers. The school opened in September 1872 the fees being 3d per week for a child between 7-10 years of age and 5d per week for a child between 10-13 years of age. In January 1873, they were reduced to 2d per week for a child under 7, 3d per week for a child aged 7-10 and 4d per week for a child aged 10-13.

The second temporary school was opened at Park Lane in September 1873. The premises, St. James Lecture Hall, were offered

---

(1) S.B.M. Vol. A. P134-136.

(2) IBID P.168.

to the Board by the Rev. S.A. Herbert, in August 1872, at an annual rent of £10 plus 4/- per week for cleaning.<sup>(1)</sup> The initial offer was declined despite the fact that the school was already equipped and, being near to the proposed Prior Street schools, would have served as a good 'feeder' for the permanent establishment. The question was reopened in March 1873 when the School Management Committee was instructed to investigate its suitability as a temporary school. In April 1873, it was decided to take over the premises as a mixed school with a staff of one master, one assistant mistress and a sewing mistress.<sup>(2)</sup> The rental was £10 p.a. but the charge for cleaning was reduced to £1 p.a.

The demand for school places continued; further temporary schools, therefore, were opened at Providence Place schoolroom in August 1874<sup>(3)</sup>, at Low Fell and at the Teams. In November 1874 the Low Fell National Infants School was transferred to the Board after notice had been received that it was going to close.<sup>(4)</sup> The rent was £26 p.a. and a single payment of £5 14s 0d was made for the desks and equipment. The Board had already (June 1874) acquired a site, in Low Fell, for a permanent school, and it was decided in December 1874 to go ahead with its erection and to transfer the pupils from the temporary school when it was completed.

---

(1) S.B.M. Vol A. P.187.

(2) IBID P.294.

(3) Edwyn John Harding, later Clerk to the Board, was appointed master.

(4) S.B.M. Vol.B. P.109. The senior department closed in 1897.

S.B.M. Vol.N.P.159.

The Teams school was opened on the 3rd March 1875 in two converted houses in Wilson Street.<sup>(1)</sup> It provided accommodation for 320 pupils in a much neglected area of the town until the erection of a permanent Board school. The staff consisted of a master, with a male ex-P.T. as assistant and a mistress with a female Ex-P.T. as assistant.<sup>(2)</sup>

Another temporary school was opened in the Mission Room in Pipewellgate in January 1876. The premises were rented for £10 p.a. and the school provided places for neglected infants in one of the poorest areas of the town.<sup>(3)</sup> At first only boys were admitted, but in March 1876, the School Management Committee recommended that girls should be admitted after the May examination.

The Pipewellgate school closed in May 1880, its pupils being transferred to High Level Road school.<sup>(4)</sup> Its subsequent history is not recorded in the Minutes; however, in June 1880, the staff are recorded as being paid at High Level Road. A new headmistress, Miss Knifton, was appointed to High Level Road in the same month, but from October onwards Miss Knifton and the original staff are recorded as being paid at Pipewellgate.<sup>(5)</sup> One can only assume that the school was re-transferred to premises in Pipewellgate or that the High Level Road school was renamed.

---

(1) 1st T.R. 1876, P.2. (2) S.B.M. Vol.B P.106.

(3) 1st T.R. 1876, P.3. (4) S.B.M. Vol.D P.168.

(5) Except in Jan.1882 when they are recorded as at High Level Road presumably a misprint, S.B.M. Vol.E. P.10.

In May 1876<sup>(1)</sup> High Fell (Sheriff Hill) National Infants

School managers informed the Board that the school would close after its Annual Grant Inspection; so the Board took it over so as not to deprive its pupils of educational facilities. The Board at the same time made it quite clear that both temporary schools at Sheriff Hill would be closed when the permanent school was completed.

### Permanent Schools

Concurrently with the establishment of temporary schools, the Board began the erection of its first permanent schools. The most pressing need for school accommodation was in the Central and North-Eastern Districts; so it was decided to build the groups of schools which became known respectively as Alexandra Road Schools and Prior Street Schools. Tenders were advertised for in August 1872<sup>(2)</sup> and in October the Board accepted the tender of John Harrison, a Gateshead contractor, to build the Prior Street Group of Schools for 1,300 pupils at a building cost of £7,000.<sup>(3)</sup> In October 1873, the plans and tender were approved, and in January 1873 a loan was granted by the Public Works Loan Commissioners at  $3\frac{1}{2}\%$  repayable over 50 years.

From the outset, the Alexandra Road project was dogged by successive frustrations. In July 1872, the plans were sent to the Education Department, but the Department was not satisfied with them.

---

(1) 1st T.R. 1876, P.3.

(2) Although the Board had decided in Jan. 1872 to advertise for tenders, action was not taken until August as Ed. Dept. had not approved.

(3) Total cost £10,200 (Site £2,200, building £7,000, Architect's fees £350, Plans, other expenses £650).

A letter of 13th July 1872 requested the Board to alter the plans from the "narrow school" to the "wide school" system. The Board declined to do so and asked if building permission would be withheld if the Board insisted on its policy of a narrow school.

At first, the Department seemed to acquiesce with the Board's decision, but a letter of 19th October 1872 made it quite clear that, although the Board's policy would be accepted on this occasion, the Department's reconsideration of its opinion was not to be taken as a precedent:

"This question was first submitted by the Architect of the Tynemouth School Board to the Department in December 1871 and he was then informed that My Lords were not prepared to approve any schoolroom not intended for the use of infants exclusively which was to be fitted with desks and benches on both sides unless it was at least 60 feet in length and 30 feet in width.

"My Lords feel that they cannot now call upon the Board to alter these plans, but the rule above stated must be borne in mind in the case of any future Board Schools for which a recommendation to the Public Works Loan Board is required." (1)

Having resolved the problem of the Alexandra Road School plans, the Board advertised for tenders. In November, that of Jacob Atkinson, a Gateshead contractor was accepted. (2) The building cost was to be £3,782. (3) On 11 December 1872 the Education Department's final approval of the scheme and recommendation of the loan were finally received. (4)

---

(1) S.B.M. Vol.A, P.216.

(2) IBID P.219.

(3) Total cost £4,800 (Site £583, building £3782, Architect's fees £290, other expenses £145).

(4) S.B.M. Vol.A P.232.

The next setback occurred in February 1873 when the Town Council rejected that the proposed school lacked a back street. The Board's plan to make a 13 foot street were approved by the Council a month later.

At the beginning of March 1873 the Board could have been satisfied that progress was being made. This satisfaction was not to last. On 12th March 1873, Harrison and Atkinson refused to sign their contracts because the price of bricks had risen from 32/- to 40/- per 1,000.<sup>(1)</sup> On 19 March, Harrison asked for £333 to be added to his tender because of increased costs.<sup>(2)</sup> Atkinson also wished to revise his tender because of the increased price of materials.<sup>(3)</sup> On 9 April the revised contract with Harrison was signed and work on the Prior Street Schools commenced. Atkinson's contract was cancelled as his demands were proving excessive.<sup>(4)</sup>

New tenders for the Alexandra Road School were advertised for and, in May, John Bulmer of Darlington was appointed contractor at a building price of £3,050. The contract was signed on 11 June.<sup>(5)</sup>

Work on the Alexandra Road Schools, once started, did not progress satisfactorily. On 8 October 1873 the architects and contractor were summoned to meet the Building Committee.<sup>(6)</sup> The contractor's excuses and assurances were evidently accepted, but equally evidently, were of no avail, as in December the Building

---

(1) S.B.M. Vol.A, P.264. (2) IBID P.269. (3) IBID P.270.

(4) IBID P.280. (5) IBID P.353. (6) IBID P.424.

Committee reported that work on the Prior Street Group of Schools was proceeding satisfactorily, but that the contractor and architects of the Alexandra Road Schools had met the Committee for an 'on site' inspection and that the contractor had been given 14 days to get on with the work, or action would be taken to terminate his contract.<sup>(1)</sup> No significant action was forthcoming, so on 8 January 1874, Bulmer's contract was terminated and advertisements placed for another contractor. At the same time, John Hindson, who had been appointed Clerk of Works on 12 March 1873 to supervise the building of the two schools, was asked to explain his long absence from work. A later Minute records that he died at the end of January 1874, so his long absence due to ill-health explains how the contractor's negligence had remained undetected for so long.

In February 1874, a new Clerk of Works, William Edington, was appointed and in March John Harrison, whose work at Prior Street was proving satisfactory, was awarded the contract to complete the Alexandra Road Schools at a price of £2,900.17.5d.<sup>(2)</sup>

After further minor setbacks<sup>(3)</sup> Prior Street School was opened on 7 September 1874, as the first permanent Board School in Gateshead, with 150 boys, 95 girls, and 108 infants on the register.<sup>(4)</sup> The staff of the boys' school consisted of a headmaster (salary £180), two assistant masters (£85 and £50 respectively) and four pupil-teachers. The girls' school had one mistress (£100), 2 assistants

---

(1) S.B.M. Vol.B, P.4.

(2) IBID P.34. £92.17.5d was later added for extra iron work.

(3) Strikes in May 1874.

(4) A public Meeting was held. First pupils received on 8 Sept.1874. S.B.M. Vol.B. P.100.

(£70 and £50 respectively) and four pupil teachers, while the infant school had a mistress (£90) and two assistants at £45 each. The Managers, who were all members of the new School Board elected in November 1873, were the Rev. J. Ketley, Dr. Banning, Messrs. Allhusen, Bewick and France.

Meanwhile work on the Alexandra Road Schools, which had been held up in May by lack of materials, was progressing slowly but satisfactorily; so in November 1874 the Board appointed the teaching staff and Managers in anticipation of the school opening in January 1875. A master (£170) and two male ex pupil-teachers (£60 each) were appointed to the boys' school; a mistress (£108) and one female ex pupil-teacher (£45) to the girls' school and an infant mistress £85 and one female ex pupil-teacher (£45) to the infants' school. Four pupil teachers were required for each department but none were appointed in the initial list of staff.<sup>(1)</sup> The Managers were the Ven. Archdeacon Prest, Messrs. Banning, Lucas, Swan and Wilson.

In fact the school did not open in January 1875 owing to more last minute delays. The delays, which occasioned the Board some concern because having appointed the staff they had to be paid, were brought to light by the Building Committee report on 9th December 1874.<sup>(2)</sup> The Committee was dissatisfied with the rate of progress and suggested an on-site inspection with the contractor. In January 1875, the

---

1. SBM Vol.B, P.134-136.  
2. IBID. P.141.

the Committee recommended that more men should be employed to speed up the work to enable the school to open in the February. The opening date was again postponed, but at last on the 3rd March 1875 the school was opened.<sup>(1)</sup>

Apart from the Voluntary infant schools at High Fell and Low Fell, which the Board took over as temporary schools pending the completion of permanent accommodation, the Board accepted the management of two other schools, one at Wrekenton and the other at New Gateshead. Both were renovated and used as permanent schools.

The transference of the Wrekenton school is interesting. Built in 1841 as a National School,<sup>(2)</sup> the managers had encountered constant difficulties in their attempts to maintain a satisfactory standard of instruction<sup>(3)</sup> to qualify for the Government grant. Soon after its formation the Board received a letter from some residents in Wrekenton containing the following resolution recorded at a public meeting on 11 January 1871:

"That in the opinion of this meeting there is a lack of school accommodation at Wrekenton. That immediate steps ought to be taken to supply the deficiency by a rate-aided school and that a deputation be pressed to wait upon the School Board at their first meeting to lay the matter before them ....."<sup>(4)</sup>

- 
1. 1st T.R. 1876, P.2.      2. C of C on Ed. 1845 Vol.II, P.129.
  3. This problem seems to have been perennial at Wrekenton. In 1845 the Rev. Fred Watkins in his report on 'Schools in the Northern District' reported unfavourably on the school. C of C on Ed.1845, Vol.II.P.139. Another unfavourable report is listed in C of C on Ed.1851-52 P.806. In 1877 and 78 the H.M.I. reported unfavourably on it: Reports of H.M. Inspectors on Gateshead Schools 1877 and 78.
  4. Letter presented to second meeting S.B.M. Vol.A. P.27.

At their next meeting the Board was presented with a memorial by J. Pallister, W. Winder and W. Pickering, three residents of Wrekenton, against the erection of a rate-aided school.

Whether or not the Board was influenced by the memorial, no steps were taken to provide a school at Wrekenton, attention not being given to the Wrekenton district, until the Rev. S. Atkinson offered the National school to the School Board on a seven year lease,<sup>(1)</sup> because the attendance had seriously diminished, income had fallen while expenses had risen steeply and the building was in need of repair.<sup>(2)</sup> The school was repaired at the Board's expense (£416) and re-opened in January, providing 126 places for infants.<sup>(3)</sup>

The other Voluntary school to be taken over as a permanent school was in New Gateshead, in the Eastern District of the town. The school, which had accommodation for 98 pupils, was offered to the Board in June 1876 by the Rev. S.A. Herbert at a nominal rent of 1/- per annum, provided he could still use the buildings when they were not required as a day school.<sup>(4)</sup> The Rev. S.A. Herbert recommended that Miss Spence, the headmistress, and her staff of pupil teachers should be retained at their posts in the Board's employ; the recommendation was accepted and as from 1 August 1876 the New Gateshead or Grant Street school, was transferred to the School Board. As the building consisted of only one room, it was extended in January 1878

- 
1. Later changed to a 21 year lease at a nominal rent of 1d. per annum.
  2. S.B.M. Vol.B, P.322.
  3. 1st T.R. 1876, P.3.
  4. IBID.

and provided permanent accommodation for 200 pupils, at a very moderate cost.<sup>(1)</sup>

The third permanent school to be erected by the Board was at Sheriff Hill. In the Autumn of 1874 the Managers of the temporary school caused Mr. Renwick, the second summoning officer, to enquire into the need locally for permanent accommodation. He reported that there were 250 children<sup>(2)</sup> between 3 and 13 in the area, of whom only 80 were attending the Board School. On the 16 December 1874, the Board therefore resolved to build a permanent school for 400 pupils<sup>(3)</sup> at Sheriff Hill and to ask Mr. Oliver to make plans.

Like the Alexandra Road project, that at Sheriff Hill was dogged by successive frustrations. It took the architect five months and a considerable amount of pressure from the Board to produce the plans. In June 1875 the Board reconsidered the provision of the infant department and decided not to proceed with it as the architect's estimates of the cost had risen to a sum which the Board felt it could not approve.<sup>(4)</sup> Mr. Oliver was therefore requested to make plans for a school for 300 pupils but to make allowances on the plans for the eventual erection of an infant school.

Obviously the new proposals were not acceptable, as in September 1875, it was decided to erect the infants' school,<sup>(5)</sup> the proposal:

1. 2 T.R. 1879, P.8
2. S.B.M. Vol.B, P.97.
3. For 150 boys, 150 girls and 100 infants.
4. S.B.M. Vol.B, P.191.
5. In December 1875 Infants School increased to 150 places.

"that the original plans for the Sheriff Hill Schools are approved and that the architect advertise for tenders for the whole or part of the work but with the provision that the Board do not accept the lowest of any tender." (1)

being carried unanimously.

When the tenders were considered on 24th February 1876, the Board accepted the one by Messrs. Stockdale and Greason at a cost of £3,694. 15. Od. and took the precaution of selecting a reserve tender for £3,960 by Messrs. Hutchinson. Presumably this was done in case similar difficulties to those experienced at Alexandra Road arose.

On 12th April 1876, application was made to the Public Works Loan Board for a loan of £5,554.15. 10d. For a change the work proceeded apace and by February 1877 the school was completed and opened.

The second School Board also began work on a school at Askew Road (Redheugh). (2) On 11 November 1874 it was decided:

"That a site in the ground of Mr. J.W. Robinson on Redheugh Estate including the Askew Road frontage, be purchased at the rate of £1150 per acre." (3)

Once again, Mr. Oliver was asked to prepare the plans for a group of schools for 800 pupils, with provision for future expansion

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.B. P.211.
  2. Name changed to Redheugh, by Board resolution on 12 Dec. 1877, and the street in which it stood renamed Prest St. in honour of S.B's Chairman. The name Redheugh is used throughout to refer to this school as another school named Askew Road was subsequently built.
  3. S.B.M. Vol.B, P.121.

to 1200. In January 1876, however, the site of the school was changed when the Board accepted the offer of land, near Redheugh Colliery, from a Mr. Armour, at a price of £2,821.<sup>(1)</sup> Mr. Oliver's new plans were approved in April 1876 and in June a tender of £6202. 13. Od. by Mr. Joseph Lee was accepted and the contract signed.<sup>(2)</sup>

It is, perhaps, pertinent at this stage to review the educational provision in Gateshead at the end of 1876 which was listed by the second Board in its Triennial Report.<sup>(3)</sup>

(a) Voluntary Schools.

School	Boys	Girls	Infants	Total
St. Mary's (N)	430	350	135	915
St. Joseph's (R.C)	315	315	312	942
Ellison Infant	-	-	175	175
Wesleyan	295	185	185	665
Lady Vernon (N)	190	150	-	340
Low Fell (N)	117	118	-	235
TOTALS	1,347	1,118	807	3,272

(b) Permanent Board Schools

School	Boys	Girls	Infants	Total
Prior Street	373	405	640	1,418
Alexandra Road	180	180	323	683
New Gateshead (Grant Street)	-	-	100	100
Wrekenton	-	-	126	126
TOTALS	553	585	1,189	2,327

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.B. P.249.
  2. IBID. P.321.
  3. Pages 3 & 4.

(c) Temporary Board Schools

School	Boys	Girls	Infants	Total
Teams	150	150	-	300
Sheriff Hill (2 schools)	150	-	100	250
Low Fell	-	-	100	100
High Level Road	180	-	-	180
Pipewellgate	-	-	80	80
TOTALS	480	150	280	910

(d) Permanent Board Schools in Course of Erection

School	Boys	Girls	Infants	Total
Redheugh (Askew Rd)	250	250	300	800
Sheriff Hill	150	100	150	450
TOTALS	400	400 <sup>(1)</sup>	450	1,250

(e) Summary of Provision

	Boys	Girls	Infants	Total
Board Permanent	553	585	1,189	2,327
Board Temporary	480	150	280	910
Board in Course of Erection	400	400	450	1,250
Voluntary Schools	1,347	1,118	807	3,272
TOTALS	2,780	2,263	2,726	7,759

Table (e) above shows that although it had taken the School Board nearly two years to open its first School (Sept. 1872) just over four years later it was, excluding those schools in course of erection, already the major provider of school places in the Borough.

- 
1. These figures are inaccurate, perhaps occasioned by the several changes which the Board made in the number of pupils for which Sheriff Hill Schools should be built.

The Third School Board, elected in November 1876, had the good fortune to bring to fruition the building programme planned and started by its predecessors. The erection of Redheugh School continued without interruption, and on Nov. 15 1877 it was opened by the Mayor. The appointment of teaching staff to the school in September 1877 is remarkable for the fact that Miss E.L. Connell, who was appointed as headmistress of the girls' school, subsequently served as a member of the School Board from 1885-1894.

Thus was established the fourth permanent school planned by the First Board in 1871. The fifth and last of the permanent schools projected at that date was Sunderland Road.

Originally a site near the cemetery had been selected and negotiations for its purchase entered into with the Corporation of Gateshead, and in November 1875 it had been agreed to build a school there for 1,000 children. However, on 11th October 1876, it was proposed:

"the experience of five years having shown that the cemetery site is an unsuitable one for Board schools, that steps be taken to rescind the contract and obtain another site at the west end of Sunderland Road." (1)

The proposal was immediately withdrawn, but the Board did decide to visit the site so as to make a final decision at the next meeting. As a result of the site inspection the new Board resolved, on 4 December 1876, to abandon the cemetery site and to consider a new one.<sup>(1)</sup> The Education Department's approval of the new site was obtained in January 1877. The following month the School Board resolved to build a school on Sunderland Road for 1,050 pupils.<sup>(2)</sup> As usual the architect was requested to draw up plans and obtain tenders for its erection. A delay ensued, until August 1877, when the tender of Messrs. Greason and Stockdale, for £6,784. 18. 1d. was accepted. The plans were submitted, on 10 October, to the Education Department which subsequently approved a loan of £10,131.10.1d for building and equipping the school.

Meanwhile, on 11 July 1877, the Board had decided to open a temporary school in the Sunderland Road Mission Rooms which were rented for £30 p.a. A headmaster (salary £130) and an assistant mistress (£50)<sup>(3)</sup> were appointed. Further staff were later added.

When the permanent school at Sunderland Road was nearing completion, in April 1879, the Board considered the appointment of its staff.

In principle it was decided to appoint the staff of the

- 
1. A site owned by Mr. Alfred Allhusen offered at a cost of £2,000 for 2 acres. S.B.M. Vol.B. P.395.
  2. 350 boys, 350 girls and 350 infants. S.B.M. Vol.B, P.430.
  3. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.35.

temporary school to their equivalent positions in the new school.

The appointments required were: (1)

Boys' School:	1 Headmaster	£160
	1 Cert. Assistant	£ 65
	4 Pupil Teachers	
Girls' School:	1 Headmistress	£100
	1 Assistant	£ 50
	4 Pupil Teachers	
Infants' School:	1 Headmistress	£ 90
	1 Ex-Pupil Teacher	£ 45
	4 Pupil Teachers	

Allowing for the transfer of staff from the temporary school, the only new staff required would be:

Boys' School:	1 Cert. Assistant
	2 Pupil Teachers
Girls' School:	1 Headmistress
	3 Pupil Teachers
Infants' School:	1 Headmistress
	1 Ex-Pupil Teacher
	4 Pupil Teachers

These appointments were further abated by the transfer of the Certificated male assistant from High Level Road and an ex- P.T. from Alexandra Road Girls' school, who had been reported as surplus to requirement by the Special Finance Committee, which had reported on economies on 11 September 1878. The net result was that the only new appointments required were two headmistresses, one for the girls' school and one for the infants' school, and eight pupil teachers.

Sunderland Road School finally opened on the 14 July 1879 and completed the building programme which had been deemed necessary and planned for by the first Schhol Board in 1871.

The Board's provision had, however, been estimated on a population of 45,281 and a child population of 8,041 between 3-13, requiring accommodation, but the population of Gateshead had expanded rapidly in the early 1870's.

In 1875, the Accountant, E.J. Harding, had estimated the population to be 60,000 and provided the following figures to show an estimated deficiency of 4,000 school places:(1)

Children 3 - 13	15,742
Deduct Under 4	<u>1,834</u>
	13,988
Less 10% Upper Classes	<u>1,390</u>
	12,518
Less 15% Unavoidable Absence	<u>1,877</u>
	<u>10,641</u>
Accommodation in:	
Board Schools (Permanent)	2,100
Board Schools (Temporary)	730
Voluntary Schools	<u>3,611</u>
	<u>6,441</u>
No. of Children	10,641
No. of Places	<u>6,641</u>
Deficiency	<u>4,000</u>

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.B, P.232.

The problem of provision for the increasing population was met by the Third Board between 1876-79. In addition to the long planned schools at Redheugh and Sunderland Road, it provided an extension to Alexandra Road School, a permanent infant school at Low Fell, and temporary schools at Mount Pleasant (Fife Street), Windmill Hills (Clarke Street) and Oakwellgate. Work was also commenced on the permanent schools for the Oakwellgate and Windmills Hills areas.

To narrate the above provision of the Third School Board it will be best to ignore the simultaneous chronological development, and treat each school separately.

#### Alexandra Road (Extension)

For some time there had been pressure on the accommodation at Alexandra Road; consequently application was made to the Education Department, on 14 March 1877,<sup>(1)</sup> to enlarge the school by the addition of 300 places. On 29 March 1877, Messrs. Ross & Lamb who had planned the original school, were appointed as architects and on 13 June 1877 the tender of Alex Thompson for £1,102.11.0d. was accepted. Building continued apace, and in January 1878 the extension was completed.<sup>(2)</sup>

- 
1. On 14 March 1877 Board resolved to open temporary school in Ely Street to relieve congestion. It closed in May 1878 after the extension was completed.
  2. 2 T.R. 1879, P.9.

Low Fell Permanent School

The provision of a permanent school at Low Fell had been mooted in June 1874 when a site had been acquired, and in December 1874 the erection of a school had been resolved. No further action was taken until 13 June 1877, when a committee of the whole Board was appointed to select a school site on June 18th; so presumably the site purchased in 1874 had been disposed of.

On 11 July 1877 it was resolved to purchase a site from Mr. Mason Watson for £350.<sup>(1)</sup> On 24 July the plans were referred back to the Architect for an estimate of the cost, and on 8 August the architect was instructed to complete the plans and to obtain tenders. The successful tender of £1,170 was submitted by a Mr. Robson on 12 September 1877 and a loan of £1,740 applied for on 14 November.<sup>(2)</sup> On the 10 April, 1878 the Building Committee reported that the school was nearing completion, but on 8 August it was resolved to build a covered shed in the yard at an additional cost of £83. 9. Od. The school for 150 infants was finally opened in September 1878<sup>(3)</sup> and the temporary school closed.

Mount Pleasant, Fife Street

Mr. Thompson and Dr. Banning proposed on 12 Dec. 1877:

"That steps should be at once taken to provide School Accommodation in the Mount Pleasant District." (4)

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.C. P.40.      2. IBID P.121.  
3. IBID P.358.              4. IBID P.145.

Mount Pleasant, Fife Street (contd)

The proposal was carried unanimously and action quickly taken as on 27 Dec. 1877 it was resolved:

"That this Board do agree to rent the Methodist New Connexion Chapel, Mount Pleasant as a temporary school. Rental £25 p.a. Tenancy terminable by six months notice." (1)

In January 1878, the Board accepted the Committee's recommendations as to the alterations necessary to make the school efficient and authorised the Committee to spend up to £40 on the alterations. On February 13th, Miss Morgan was appointed headmistress at a salary of £75 p.a. and the school opened on Monday 4th March 1878 with an attendance of 72.(2)

Windmill Hills, Clarke Street

On 11 July 1877, the Board turned down a proposal to rent a portion of the Iron Church as a temporary infants' school at a rental of £40 p.a; instead the Committee was instructed to report on the cost. The Committee reported on 24 July 1877 and recommended the renting of the lower rooms of the Iron Church which had excellent access to Clarke Street.(3) Gas, plastering and doors would be required. The estimate for the necessary renovations was £55, and the rent would be £35 p.a. The report was accepted unanimously. In August the opening of the school was postponed for

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.155.
  2. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.223.
  3. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.44.

one month, and in September the motion of 24 July was rescinded; the Board accepting instead free use of the school, provided that the alterations were done at the Board's expense.<sup>(1)</sup> On 10 October 1877, Mrs. Graham was appointed mistress at £75 p.a.

The permanent infants' school on Windmill Hills was decided upon in October 1877 as part of the day industrial school project, but the Education Department<sup>(2)</sup> in June 1875 said that the portion of the site,  $\frac{1}{8}$  acre, permitted for the infants' school was insufficient, and unless at least  $\frac{1}{4}$  acre could be made available, the schools should be built separately. As a result of this communication the Board decided to abandon the idea of an infants' school on the site and to try to procure another site in nearby Milfield Terrace.

On 10 July 1878, the Board deferred a decision on the alternative site of 1600 sq.yds, which had been offered at a ground rent of £40 p.a. Then, on 24 July 1878, the Board decided to erect the school, to be built in lieu of the Clarke Street temporary school, on a portion of the day industrial school site and to obtain sufficient area for it by purchasing the sites of two houses which adjoined it, and which would make the available area 1200 sq.yds.<sup>(3)</sup> On 11 September 1878, the Public Works

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.87.  
 2. IBID. P.292.  
 3. IBID. P.305.

Windmill Hills, Clarke Street (contd)

Loan Board and the Secretary of State both agreed to the erection of an infants' school on the chosen site.<sup>(1)</sup> A Tender for £1,644. 8.10d was accepted on 24 November 1878 and on 11 December, when the plans were finally approved by the Education Department and the Home Department, a loan was applied for. Building continued during 1879 and the school opened on 5 April, 1880.<sup>(2)</sup>

Oakwellgate Schools

Oakwellgate in the 1870's was a poor but crowded area of the town near to the river, which had been neglected until March 1877, when the Board rented the Alexandra Hall, Oakwellgate as a temporary school at £40 p.a.<sup>(3)</sup> After some hesitation, the premises were approved by the Education Department, so that the Board could accurately gauge the needs of the area, and on 28 May 1877 the temporary school opened.<sup>(4)</sup>

The origin of the permanent school was in April 1878 when the Building Committee reported that, having had its attention directed to the state of the Oakwellgate School and to the Education Department's recommendation that a permanent school should be provided, the committee had inspected a site and recommended its purchase, if a suitable price could be arranged.<sup>(5)</sup>

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.344.      (2. S.B.M. Vol.D, P.155.  
 3. S.B.M. Vol.B, P.435.      4. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.2.  
 5. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.238-239.

Oakwellgate Schools (contd)

The Vendor was asking £2,100 for a site of about 800 sq.yds. and the Committee thought that £800-£900 would be a reasonable figure.

In May 1878, the Board decided not to purchase the site previously considered and instead placed advertisements in the local newspapers requesting offers of sites.<sup>(1)</sup> Although several offers were made to the Board, a suitable large site was impossible to procure from a single vendor: so on 22 May 1878, the Board agreed to purchase two adjoining sites<sup>(2)</sup> in Oakwellgate; one from Miss Redhead for £950 and the other from Mr. 'J. Softley for £750.<sup>(3)</sup>

Further delay was occasioned in June when, after appointing Mr. Oliver as architect, the Board acceded to a request from the Town Improvement Committee to postpone its building plans for one month, pending a report by that Committee on the Oakwellgate area, but on learning, in July, that the Council was not proceeding with any improvements, Mr. Oliver was instructed to proceed with provisional plans for the school.<sup>(4)</sup>

Events then moved quickly. The Board approved the plans and submitted them to the Education Department on 24 July 1878.

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.265.
  2. A third adjoining plot of land was purchased in Sept.1878 from Messrs. Harle for £800.
  3. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.270-271 - Softley's charge amended to £770 on 12 June.
  4. IBID P.297.

Oakwellgate Schools (contd)

The Education Department's approval was obtained and tenders advertised for on 14 August. The tender of Greason & Stockdale for £2,895. 7s. 3d. was accepted on 27 September. Finally, on 13 November the contract was sealed and application made for a loan of £5,830 to cover the cost of site, buildings, fees and contingencies.

The building of the school continued without interruption and in May 1880 it opened, providing 468 school places.<sup>(1)</sup> When it was completed, the Oakwellgate temporary school closed, the pupils transferring to the new permanent school. As at Sunderland Road and Windmill Hills Infant School, the staff was transferred from the temporary school; the only new appointments being made were to fill vacancies occasioned by a larger establishment in the new group of schools.

Although the opening of the Windmill Hills and Oakwellgate Schools occurred during the tenure of the fourth Board (elected Nov. 1879), their erection was the work of the third Board to whom any credit due must be given. However, it is necessary to go back to the years 1878-79 to trace the third Board's survey of educational provision in Gateshead and the deficiency of school places at that time, as the survey was the basis for the further building programme carried out in the years 1880 - 1885.

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.D, P.168.

Survey of Educational Provision and Deficiencies 1878-79

In March 1879 the Board replied to an Education Department circular giving the state of education in Gateshead as at 31 December 1878. The population was estimated to be 63,400; the number of children between 3-13 was 16,633 and the number between 5-13 was 12,680. School places were available in Voluntary and Board schools for 14,854 pupils, and the Board stated that deficiency of school places was 1,213.<sup>(1)</sup>

Mr. Swan<sup>(2)</sup> proposed, in May 1878, that, because of this known deficiency, steps should be taken to acquire suitable school sites, but an amendment setting up a committee of the whole Board, to look into the question of where accommodation was required and the best means of providing it, was carried instead.

The next move was made in June<sup>(1)</sup> by the Education Department, which questioned the validity of the figures in the Board's March return. The Department said that it understood that the deficiency would be 1200 places when the school in course of erection was completed, but calculating children requiring accommodation as 1/6th of the total population (63,400) the Department was unable to understand how a figure of 16,633 (between 3-13) had been arrived at, especially as the number showed an increase of 40% on the number stated by the Board in January 1871. The

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.440.
  2. Later Sir Joseph Wilson Swan, the inventor of the incandescent electric filament.
  3. Letter dated 9 June 1879, S.B.M. Vol.C, P.489-90.

Survey of Educational Provision and Deficiencies 1878-79 (contd)

Department went on to say that if calculations had been made on the same basis as the first Board, then, it was reckoned, that 9/10th of the total (16,633) would require public elementary education. A further reduction of  $\frac{1}{8}$  should be made for unavoidable absence, therefore provision would be required for 13,099 children. Existing accommodation and that in course of erection provided only 9,353 places, therefore the Department calculated that there was a deficiency of 3,746 places. Finally, the Department asked for a complete list of Public Elementary Schools in the School District with their estimated accommodation, and for a statement of how the Board proposed to fill the deficiency.

The Department's letter was referred to the School Management Committee and, in October 1879, having carefully considered the relevant documents and a report of the Census Committee, the Board wrote to the Education Department enclosing details of the census and its proposals for dealing with the deficiency.(1)

Number of Children 3-13	15,866
Under 4's (half those between 3-5)	1,891
Balance 4 - 13	<u>13,975</u>
Less 10% for class of children not attending Public Elementary Schools.	1,397
	<u>12,578</u>
Less 12 $\frac{1}{2}$ % for reasonable absence:	1,571
Balance 4-13 requiring accommodation:	<u>11,007</u>

Survey of Educational Provision and Deficiencies 1878-79 (contd)Accommodation already Provided or in Course of  
Erection.Permanent Board Schools

Prior Street	1,341
Alexandra Road	1,008
Sunderland Road	1,050
Redheugh	800
Sheriff Hill	450
* Oakwellgate	468
Grant Street	200
* Windmill Hills	201
Low Fell	150
Wrekenton	126

5,794

\* Nearing Completion.

Voluntary Schools<sup>(1)</sup>

St. Mary's National	915
St. Joseph's R.C.	942
Ellison National	175
St. Cuthbert's (Lady Vernon) N.	340
Low Fell National	150
Rochester Street Wesleyan	350

3,622

Voluntary	3,622
Board	5,794

9,416

Total Children 4-13 Requiring Accm.	11,007
Total available places	<u>9,416</u>
Deficiency	<u>1,591</u>

---

1. Several of the Voluntary Schools had been considerably enlarged since 1871.

Survey of Educational Provision and Deficiencies 1878-79 (contd)

To supply the deficiency the Board proposed:

1. To further enlarge Alexandra Road School	200
2. To purchase and improve Temporary High Road School	150
3. To continue Mount Pleasant Temporary School	150
4. To provide a Day Industrial School (In Course of Erection)	200
5. To add the R.C. provision of a new school	300
6. To recognise as efficient an existing private elementary school	<u>100</u>
TOTAL	<u>1,100</u>

The above proposals still left a deficiency of 491 school places. This deficit, the Board said, appeared to be in the centre of the town, and the Board proposed to open immediately a temporary school for about 200 pupils to ascertain the actual need, in accordance with the Board's policy.

Education Department approval of the above plan was obtained and the plan was put into effect by the fourth Board (1879-1882) and the fifth Board (1882-85).

CHAPTER IVEXPANSION OF EDUCATIONAL PROVISION

If the School Board thought that the task of providing new schools was nearly completed, the survey of 1879 must have disillusioned them, and the Fourth Board elected in 1879, had to shoulder the burden of providing further new schools to keep pace with the increasing population. Indeed, as the population continued to rise, the burden became a perennial one and the remaining twenty-three years of the School Board's history are punctuated with the Board's efforts to provide further elementary schools. In the 1880's and 1890's the Board also provided two Higher Grade schools and a Day Industrial School.(1)

The Fourth Board, between 1879 - 1882, built two further permanent schools at Durham Road for 847 pupils and at Askew Road for 636 pupils.(2) Both schools were opened in July 1881. Two further temporary schools were opened: one in Temperance Hall, Oakwellgate and one in Ely Street as a junior department for Alexandra Road School.(3) By 1882, the Board was providing 7,443 places in permanent accommodation,(4) including the Ellison Infants' school which was transferred to the Board in July 1882.

- 
1. See Chapters 5 & 6.
  2. 3rd T.R. 1882, P.6.
  3. IBID, P.7.
  4. IBID.

The transfer was effected under Section 23 of the 1870 Act after the Ellison School Managers had stated their intention of closing the school. The school was renovated at the Board's expense and an agreement entered into, with the managers, for the Board's tenancy which could be terminated by three months notice. One important term of the agreement was that if the Board relinquished its tenancy then the Managers would repay the unexpired portion of the money borrowed by the Board for the improvements.

In 1888 the former managers requested the retransfer of the building as it was required for church extension plans, and they paid the Board for the outstanding portion of the loan.(1)

The Education Department's reaction(2) was to enquire how the Board would supply the deficiency caused by the closure. The Board then wrote to the Charity Commissioners, whom it understood had received some proposals from the former managers about supplying the deficiency.(3) In November the Commissioners replied that they proposed to appoint the Managers of the National School (St. Mary's) as temporary trustees to establish a scheme for the registration of this charity.(4)

- 
1. Letter 22 June, S.B.M. Vol.H. following P.147.
  2. Letter 4 July, IBID.
  3. Letter 12 July, IBID.
  4. Letter 26 November, IBID.

Their proposals provided for the appointment of permanent trustees, who, subject to the consent of the Home Secretary, would be empowered to sell the Ellison School, if and when the tenancy of the School Board had been determined. The proceeds of the sale were then to be applied to provide a new infants' department for St. Mary's National School.

At this stage a dispute broke out over the choice of a site. The Board wanted the replacement school built as near as possible to the current site, as it felt it was unsuitable to enlarge St. Mary's school, its situation being unsuitable.<sup>(1)</sup> Their resolution of 12 December was communicated to the Charity Commissioners, and the Education Department was sent a copy of all the correspondence.

At the end of December the Education Department informed the Board<sup>(2)</sup> that it had been memorialised by four Board members<sup>(3)</sup> who had pointed out that if the school was re-transferred before the annual examination grants to the value of £150 would be lost, and the children would be unable to pass into a standard. The memorialists therefore wanted the Department to insist on the School remaining open until equal or greater accommodation was provided by the Charity Commissioners, on some suitable site, in the

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.H, P.148.

2. Letter 31 Dec. S.B.M. Vol.H, following P.163.

3. Dr. Redmond, Miss Connell, Mr. Rule and Mr. Thubron.

immediate vicinity. On 9 January 1889, the Board adopted a resolution which was substantively the same as the memorial.<sup>(1)</sup>

The dispute dragged on. In March 1889 the Board sent a copy of its correspondence, with the former managers, to the Education Department. In outline the Board stated the current position and its own opinions on the matter.<sup>(2)</sup>

The intention of the former managers had been to determine the Board's occupation by a notice, but some doubt prevailed about the correct procedure in cases where a trust was involved. The Board suggested that the case was covered by Section 24 of the 1870 Act and therefore the sanction of the Education Department was required. It was pointed out that the Board's main concern was that sufficient suitable accommodation should be made available in the immediate locality, before the re-transfer was sanctioned.

In April,<sup>(3)</sup> the Education Department replied that it understood that the necessary three months notice had been given, but it was not clear whether the money, repaid to the Board, represented the current value of the works executed in 1882. In any case the Department required a simple certificate saying that the financial aspect had been concluded satisfactorily. The

---

1: S.B.M. Vol.H, P.163.

2: Letter 22 March 1889, IBID following P.231.

3: S.B.M. Vol.H, P.235.

Department, noting the Board's resolution of the 9 January had communicated with the Charity Commissioners, and it pointed out that a clause in the Board's instrument of tenancy gave it the right to continue using the school for a period not exceeding twelve months from the service of the notice to quit.

At its April meeting<sup>(1)</sup> the Board resolved that it was satisfied with the payment received and, that it had understood, that it could use the premises until a new site was approved by the Education Department. In May, the financial certificate was sent to the Education Department, which informed the Board in July that the retransfer had been sanctioned.<sup>(2)</sup>

Although sanctioned, the retransfer was by no means accomplished. The Board strongly disapproved of the Charity Commissioners scheme because the Board felt that it was intended to close the Ellison school before the new site was fixed. In September, therefore, the Education Department's attention was called to the scheme.<sup>(3)</sup> The Board's strong dissent from a proposal, which was a distinct departure from the conditions upon which the retransfer had been agreed, as stated in the resolutions of December 1888 and January 1889, was expressed. The Board also requested the Home Secretary to hear their case.

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.H, P.235.
  2. IBID, P.309.
  3. IBID, P.349.

On 19 September<sup>(1)</sup> the Education Department stated that it did not draw the same inference from the scheme as did the Board, but final reassurance was not forthcoming until February 1890<sup>(2)</sup> when the Department said that the Charity Commissioners would not approve of the sale of the Ellison School until a new site had been settled. The Board was therefore instructed to select a site with the school trustees.

Having established the principle, for which it had been struggling, the Board was ready to negotiate with the trustees, but over the selection of a site, the second stage of the dispute commenced.

In June 1890,<sup>(3)</sup> the trustees proposed to acquire the site of an Institute next to the existing school. The Board was not satisfied, but, after much discussion and an attempt to claim compulsory purchase powers under Clauses 19 & 20 of the 1870 Act, it was agreed, in November, to accept the trustees' proposal.<sup>(4)</sup>

In July 1892, the plans for the new school and the terms of exchange were accepted, despite an attempt to stop the project as "wholly inadequate."<sup>(5)</sup>

The school was completed in 1893. The pupils transferred to the new building in April and the former building was handed back to the Managers.<sup>(6)</sup>

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.H, P.370. (2) IBID: P.470. (3) S.B.M. Vol.J, P.71-72.  
 4. IBID, P.210. (5) S.B.M. Vol.K, P.214.  
 6. IBID. P.414.

However the dispute was not finished. In February 1894<sup>(1)</sup> the former managers asked for the return of the £58.12.0d. paid to the Board in 1888. The request appeared to be straightforward, as the sum was paid to the Board as a condition for the termination of their tenancy of the old building, but the Board, by occupying the new building, had not really terminated their tenancy, especially as the new building was being occupied under the 1882 instrument of tenancy.

The Board therefore decided, in June, to repay the disputed sum, provided the Education Department agreed and provided the Managers entered into a new agreement.<sup>(2)</sup>

In September,<sup>(3)</sup> the Education Department said that it could not adjudicate on the matter, but that the Auditor would have to allow or disallow the payment. The Department noted that tenancy of the new building was still under the terms of the 1882 agreement. It suggested this agreement should be replaced by a new one; however, if the old agreement was terminated, then the managers would have to reimburse the Board for the original improvements. Therefore, the Board was recommended not to repay the £58. 12.0d. until a new agreement had been effected.

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.L, P.158.
  2. IBID P.275.
  3. IBID P.339-40.

In June 1895, the Board repaid the £58. 12. Od. to the Managers on the understanding that, if it was surcharged, it would be refunded.<sup>(1)</sup> The Auditor reviewed the case in April 1896 and objected to the payment unless the rights of the Board to reasonable occupation of the new premises were secured.<sup>(2)</sup> A new agreement was therefore made protecting the Board against disturbance. The school continued in use until the Nun's Lane school was built.<sup>(3)</sup>

Apart from the Ellison dispute the period 1882 - 1891 was a quiet one, only one new elementary school being built. The Fifth Board, 1882-85, completed the scheme begun by the Fourth Board by enlarging Oakwellgate School by 325 places<sup>(4)</sup> and Alexandra Road School.<sup>(5)</sup> It also provided a temporary school at Carr Hill for 50-60 infants. The Sixth Board also increased the accommodation available by enlarging the Higher Grade School, Durham Road School and Askew Road School, and by building the new permanent school at Teams, so that by 1888 the provision of school places was as follows:<sup>(6)</sup>

1. S.B.M. Vol.M, P.106.    2. IBID, P.371-2.
3. After the School Board gave up the use of the school the Charity became the Ellison Educational Institute (Charity Commission Order dated 20 March 1900) "... for the purposes of a Sunday School in connection with the Church of England and for any other educational purposes for the benefit of the poor of Gateshead ..." Gateshead Endowed Charities 1904.
4. Temperance Hall Temporary School therefore closed.
5. Ely Street Temporary School therefore closed.
6. 5th T.R. 1888, P.5.

Permanent Board Schools	9,641
Temporary Board Schools	482
Voluntary Schools	<u>4,607</u>
TOTAL:	<u>14,730</u>

Between 1889-91,<sup>(1)</sup> the Board improved Sheriff Hill and Wrekenton schools, provided : cookery and manual instruction rooms at Alexandra Road, a cookery room at Redheugh and started the construction of cookery and laundry rooms at Prior Street.

The real interest during these years lies in the provision of 2 schools by the Roman Catholics in the town, one of which was soon recognised by the Board and therefore received grants, while over the second a prolonged controversy developed.

In the 1870's,<sup>(2)</sup> St. Mary's National and St. Joseph's Roman Catholic schools were both enlarged; a new Voluntary school, Rochester Street, was erected by the Congregationalists in 1876. In 1879, as already noted, the Board proposed to recognise as efficient the proposed Roman Catholic School for 300 pupils. Finally, in 1891, a new Boys Department for 500 pupils was added to Lady Vernon's National and the Congregationalists school was enlarged and improved. The Gateshead Board, therefore, did not object in principle to the erection or enlargement of Voluntary schools, but it did object in detail to the two Catholic schools erected during the 1880's.

- 
1. Whitehall Rd. H.G.S. was also built, see Chapter VII.
  2. Smith: "A History of English Elementary Education 1760-1902" points out on P.313 that by 1880 provision of new Voluntary schools was nearly at an end. This was not true in Gateshead.

In September 1882,(1) when asked by the Education Department for its opinions about the erection of a Roman Catholic School at the Teams, the Board stated that the school was not unnecessary. Presumably this was because the Teams was a developing area of the town in which the Board subsequently built its own school. The Catholic School, however, was not built.

Two other Catholic Schools were built, one at Wrekenton(2) and one at Park Lane.(3) On the evidence of the minutes the Board was not consulted about the erection of the Wrekenton School, until the Education Department asked the Board if it had any objection to the school being placed on the Annual Grant list, under Section 98 of the 1870 Act.

The request, in respect of the Wrekenton School, was made in May 1884,(4) and the Board appointed the Managers of Sheriff Hill School and the Rev. P.T. Matthews to enquire into the case. Their report was that the following pupils and accommodation existed in the area:(5)

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.D, P.235
  2. St. Oswald's.
  3. St. Wilfred's.
  4. S.B.M. Vol.F, P.54-55.
  5. IBID P.81-83.

	<u>Pupils 5-13 Yrs.</u>	<u>School Accommodation</u>
Sheriff Hill	504	500
Eighton Banks(1)	281	352
Wrekenton	<u>271</u>	<u>126</u>
	1,056	<u>978</u>
Less 10% Upper Classes	<u>105</u>	
	951	
Less 12 $\frac{1}{2}$ % Absence	<u>119</u>	
	<u>832</u>	

Therefore, there was an excess of accommodation of 146 places, although it may be noted that it occurred in the Eighton Banks district, while in Wrekenton itself there was a deficiency. A copy of the report was forwarded to the Education Department, in June 1884, with the Board's decision that no additional accommodation was necessary in the Wrekenton District.(2)

Further correspondence ensued and in September 1884 the following resolution was carried by the Board:

"The Board, having considered the correspondence relative to the proposed R.C. School at Wrekenton, sees no reason for altering its opinion already communicated to the Department and further add that no particular difficulty has been experienced in getting Wrekenton children to attend School." (3)

- 
1. Neighbouring district to Wrekenton not in S.B. District, but part of R.C. parish which was not entirely in S.B. District.
  2. S.B.M. Vol.F, P.81-83.
  3. S.B.M. Vol.F, P.147.

In October 1885 the Department enquired whether there had been any alteration in the circumstances at Wrekenton and was informed that there had been no change.(1)

The dispute continued when, in January 1886, the Department sent the Board a copy of a census of the Catholic population in the Wrekenton District made by the Rev. W.W. Philipson. The census(2) showed that within  $1\frac{1}{2}$  miles of Wrekenton there were 107 Catholic families totalling 481 persons and at a range of 2 miles the number increased to well over 500. At least  $\frac{1}{6}$ th were of school age, therefore the Managers had built the R.C. school at Wrekenton to provide for "the spiritual, as well as the intellectual, well-being of more than 500 co-religionists"(3)

The Board remained firm in its opinion, that the Catholic School at Wrekenton was unnecessary, and communicated its views to the Department on 10 February 1886.(4)

In December 1887, the Rev. W.W. Philipson resigned(5) from the School Board; no reason was given but it was presumably as a protest against the Board's attitude towards the Wrekenton R.C. School. In May 1888, he asked the Board if it would consent to the school being placed on the grant list, if the numbers were limited to 50.

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.F, P.420.

2. IBID P.489.

3. IBID.

4. S.B.M. Vol.G, P.16-17.

5. IBID P.415-416.

The Board's resolution, after discussion of this letter, is significant as it clearly states that the Board's opposition to the school and the Park Lane School was not denominational:

"This Board .... has never opposed the Grant to the Wrekenton School as an R.C. School but it has been its practice to furnish to the Department such information that its enquiries demanded, and such of course will be its practice in any future enquiries from the Department." (1)

In effect, the answer to the Rev. Philipson's letter was still "No". Correspondence between the Board and the Department continued in a similar vein for the next few years. Finally, as the result of a deputation from the Wrekenton school in January 1891,<sup>(2)</sup> a special committee was set up to look into the question, and, on 9th September,<sup>(3)</sup> the Board decided to withdraw its objection to the Wrekenton School being placed on the Annual Grant List.

Park Lane School was built,<sup>(4)</sup> because St. Joseph's R.C. School was reported by the inspectors to be grossly overcrowded.<sup>(5)</sup> A motion by the Rev. P.T. Matthews,<sup>(6)</sup> in March 1886, that a Catholic School should be erected in the Eastern District of Gateshead, was defeated. The Board's decision was

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.H, P.2.      2. S.B.M. Vol.J, P.241.
  3. IBID, P.445-446.
  4. Notice of intention to build was given to the Board in December 1884. S.B.M. Vol.E, P.210-211.
  5. S.B.M. Vol.G, P.220-21.
  6. R.C. Priest, Board Member & Corresponding Manager of St. Joseph's School.

sensible because Prior Street, its own school in that part of the town, had surplus accommodation.

However, a Catholic school was built at Park Lane in the Eastern District, and on 10 February 1887 the Catholic lobby on the Board attempted to pass the following motion:

"The Board ..... consider accommodation provided at St. Joseph's to be inadequate, and they are of the opinion that the additional accommodation provided in the new premises at Park Lane is urgently needed to meet the legitimate wants of the Catholic body in Gateshead."(1)

The motion was lost to an amendment which pointed out that the Board had no right to enquire into the religious beliefs of the population when taking a census and, therefore, could not inform the Education Department whether or not the school was necessary. The decision was communicated to the Education Department.

On 9 March, the Board received a copy of a letter from St. Joseph's managers informing the Education Department that the surplus children had been removed to the new, spacious Park Lane premises. Also the Board was informed that the Education Department(2) inferred from the Board's reply, of

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.G, P.220-221.

2. Letter dated, 18 Feb. S.B.M. Vol.G, P.244.

10 February, that it had no objection to Park Lane being placed on the Grant List, and unless a complaint was lodged within fourteen days, such steps would be taken.

In turn, the Board asked the Department to postpone its decision. The Department refused; a letter dated 5th March, read at the same Board meeting,<sup>(1)</sup> informed the Board that Park Lane School had been placed on the grant list.

Some Board members attempted to address a motion to the Education Department expressing the Board's disapproval of the Department's action, but the majority accepted the fait accompli and the motion was defeated.<sup>(2)</sup>

From 1891 onwards the successive School Boards provided new schools on a scale equal to the provision between 1871-79. The Eighth Board, 1891-94, built a school for 1,050 pupils at Shipcote, an expanding area of the town; it also helped to relieve some of the overcrowding at Durham Road School. When it was completed, the Mount Pleasant temporary school was closed. The Board also began building Brighton Avenue and Rose Street schools, acquired land to build a school at Low Fell and accepted the transfer of the Rochester Street Congregational School.<sup>(3)</sup>

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.G, P.245.
  2. IBID.
  3. 7th TR. 1894, P.7.

The terms on which the Board accepted the Congregational School are very interesting, as, in some respects, they anticipated the position of voluntary schools after the 1902 Act.

Article 2 of the Agreement<sup>(1)</sup> between the Board and the Voluntary Managers stated:

"The Managers of the school shall maintain and keep in order the exterior of the premises and the School Board shall likewise maintain and keep in reasonable repair the interior of the premises."<sup>(2)</sup>

Under the 1902 Act the whole cost of maintenance, of non-provided schools, except repairs (other than those due to fair wear and tear) and improvements to buildings, was transferred to the local education authorities, successors of the School Boards.<sup>(3)</sup> Perhaps a closer parallel, with respect to the above article, is that the school's position was similar to that of an Aided School under the 1944 Act, whose managers are responsible for the external repairs, and the appointment of teachers, while the local authority is responsible for the maintenance of the school and the payments of the teachers' salaries.

- 
1. See Appendix No.7.
  2. S.B.M. Vol.L, P.207.
  3. Wells & Taylor. New Law of Education 5th Edition London 1961, P.120.

The position of the Teachers in the Congregational School was dealt with in Article 7:

"That all the teachers at present employed in the said school be retained as Teachers under the Board and that such teachers be paid as at present until the end of the school year."

The reference to salaries was because the teachers of the Congregational School were still being paid a fixed salary and a share of the grants received, whereas the Board naturally wished all its staff to be on the fixed salary scales. What is significant here is that no mention is made of who had the right to appoint new teachers to the school,<sup>(1)</sup> although, in practice, future appointments were made by the School Board. The most obvious case was the appointment of a new headmaster in June 1895.<sup>(2)</sup>

On the question of appointment of staff, the Rochester Street School Agreement did not anticipate the position after 1902, when Voluntary Managers retained the right to appoint teachers, but it did mean that on this point the School was in the position of a Controlled School under the 1944 Act.<sup>(3)</sup>

- 
1. Article 5 laid down that the appointment of a caretaker would be the responsibility of the Managers "and the School Board shall concur in the appointment."
  2. S.B.M. Vol.M, P.108.
  3. Wells & Taylor.

Further schools were completed by the Ninth School Board 1894-97. Rose Street School, for 456 infants and juniors, was completed, and plans were approved for Boys' and Girls' Departments for a further 600 pupils. Brighton Avenue School, for 1,275 pupils, was finished in January 1896 and eighteen months later had 1,537 pupils on the registers. Low Fell school for 800 pupils was completed in 1897. The Board also secured sites for the enlargement of Victoria Road School, and for a school for 450 pupils, in Nun's Lane which, it was expected, would replace the Ellison Street School and relieve the overcrowding in Oakwellgate and Grant Street Schools.(1)

The Board commented, in 1897, that the "Schools built in the last four or five years bear striking testimony to the improvements in school planning."(2) In comparison, some of the earliest schools were now very inconvenient and consequently between 1897 - 1900 the Board modernised the Boys' and Girls' Departments of Prior Street, the Boys' Department of Alexandra Road and added a classroom to the Sheriff Hill infants department; three of the first schools which had been built.(3)

In the same period, the Nun's Lane School was built and the Ellison School closed. Rose Street Boys' and Girls'

1. 8th T.R. 1897, P.6.

2. IBID, P.7.

3. 9th T.R. 1900, P.8-9.

Departments were completed and a new school for 300 pupils built at Wrekenton as the old building was inadequate and unsafe owing to colliery workings.(1)

In 1900, therefore, educational provision by the Board was almost complete. A further site had been acquired at Kelvin Grove for a school to relieve the overcrowding at Brighton Avenue, but labour disputes had prevented the commencement of building and the school was not finally completed until after the School Board had been succeeded by the Local Education Authority. In the meantime, the Board opened a temporary school, in September 1900, in the Baptist Tabernacle, Dunsmuir Grove. Yet another site had been acquired in Chester Place, but building did not commence until 1901 and was not completed until 1904. Plans were also prepared for a Junior Department to accommodate 350 pupils, at Victoria School, and in 1900 its erection was impending.(2)

In 1900 therefore the complete educational provision in Gateshead was as shown in the following table:(3)

- 
1. 9th T.R. 1900, P.8-9.
  2. IBID.
  3. IBID, P.7.

V = Voluntary School

Ward	Population 1891 Census	School	Accmdn.	Total
East	10,015	Oakwellgate Grant Street St. Wilfred's R.C. (V) Nun's Lane	789 200 375 470	1,834
E. Central	9,230	Sunderland Road Prior Street	1,050 1,314	2,364
S. East	5,563	Wrekenton	300	300
South	9,132	Wrekenton R.C. (V) Sheriff Hill Low Fell	163 560 990	1,713
North		St. Mary's N. (V) St. Joseph's R.C. (V) Wesleyan (V)	903 1,050 751	2,704
W. Central	8,512	Windmill Hills Alexandra Road Brighton Avenue	701 1,121 1,275	3,097
Central & ) S. West )	7,787 ) 5,923 )	South Street Shipcote Higher Grade, Whitehall Rd. " " Durham Road	901 1,050 1,020 540	3,520
N. West	10,201	Askew Road Pipewellgate	837 150	987
West	10,511	Redheugh Victoria Rose Street St. Cuthbert's N (V)	800 1,080 976 1,055	3,911
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>85,742</b>			<b>20,430</b>

N.B. Rochester Street and Kelvin Grove temporary schools omitted.

In the last three years of the Board's life, the Victoria Road Junior School was completed and opened on 7th April 1902<sup>(1)</sup> and a junior school was opened at Sunderland Road in September 1902.<sup>(2)</sup> Work continued on the Kelvin Grove school and preparations were made for the erection of a temporary iron school at Chester Place; neither was completed by the time the Board handed over to the new Education Committee.

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.Q, P.397.  
2. IBID, P.543.

CHAPTER V

Attendance at Board Schools

"Send yor bairns to skeul,  
Learn them all you can,  
Myek Scholarship yor faithful friend  
And you'll nivvor see the skeul board man."

19th Century Durham Ballad  
by Tommy Armstrong

The preceding chapters have shown that sufficient schools were provided, but the provision of schools was one problem; filling them was another. At first competition from private and voluntary schools, and the lack of an efficient system to enforce attendance made the Board's task difficult, but, as time passed, these factors were overcome; the Board schools became accepted as efficient institutions, and the problem was brought under control.

A week before the first temporary school opened, the Board appointed its first summoning officer on 22nd August 1872.<sup>(1)</sup> His duties were as follows:<sup>(2)</sup>

"(a) To visit daily, in regular succession, portions of the borough and to ascertain, the names, ages and addresses of all children between 5-13, not attending a public elementary school, and the name, occupation and probable earnings of the parent of such child, with such other particulars as will enable the School Board to decide upon each particular case.

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.A, P.196. A second summoning officer was appointed 10 June 1874. In July, the School district was divided into two districts, one East and one West of the Durham Road.
  2. IBID.

- (b) To keep a daily journal of the work done, persons visited and particulars obtained; a summary of work in tabular form to be laid before each monthly meeting of the Board."

The summoning officer was required to work from 9 a.m. to 5 p.m. on weekdays and attend any committee meetings held after 5 p.m.

As early as January 1873 the summoning officer reported on the poor attendance at High Level Road School and suggested that the main reason was the high fees charged (5-10 years 3d per week; 10-13 years 5d per week). He pointed out that other elementary schools; including St. Nicholas in Newcastle<sup>(1)</sup> were all cheaper. The Board acted quickly to remove this deterrent, reducing the fees to:<sup>(2)</sup>

Under 7	-	2d per week
7 - 10	-	3d per week
10- 13	-	4d per week

At the same time, Voluntary schools were asked to provide the Board with the figures and names of children in attendance, so that a check could be made on those parents who claimed that their children were attending a voluntary school.

As a result of the above measures, attendance at the Board's temporary schools improved, but the problem of the private

1. S.B.M. Vol.A, P.235. An indication that Gateshead children crossed to Newcastle for schooling.
2. S.B.M. Vol.A, P.237.

venture schools remained. In June 1874, the summoning officer asked the Board to try to secure the closure of certain private schools, as being unsuitable for the large numbers admitted. He said that in many cases the private schools were "a mere pretence for school attendance." and that registers were not kept.(1) .

Apart from requesting the local H.M.I., in 1871, to inspect and report on those that might be considered efficient, no action had hitherto been taken by the Board concerning the private schools. Presumably this was because the Board, not being able to provide places, felt that an inadequate education was better than no education at all. By mid-1874, however, the first permanent schools were nearing completion and the Board was in a position to act. Consequently, the Board wrote to the Education Department requesting that an H.M.I. should visit the private schools in the district, with a view to "declaring them, when found so to be, inefficient."(2)

No evidence of any action by the Education Department is available, and the problem of the private elementary schools continued. In 1876 the Board drew attention to the fact that children attending private elementary schools were exempt from

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.B, P.72.

2. IBID, P.153.

the provisions of the Byelaws, "if it is shown that the child is under efficient instruction in some other manner" and it stated that considerable latitude must be given to the phrase "under efficient instruction in some other manner."

It was never the Board's policy to deprive parents of their choice of school, if the school was efficient, but in 1876 the Board said:

"Many private elementary schools are devoid of proper furniture and apparatus and the premises are unsuitable <sup>3</sup> mere attendance itself may be prejudicial to health, even supposing the teacher is qualified." (1)  
In addition many private schools kept no registers, and were "an asylum for irregular attenders." (2) "

Although many school boards found difficulty in enforcing the byelaws, many magistrates deeming all schools efficient, this problem was not prevalent in Gateshead, where the magistrates frequently convicted in cases where a child was not receiving suitable instruction. (3)

Evidence from local directories shows that although many private schools, flourishing in 1870, did not long survive, a few did and others were established to replace those which were discontinued.(4) With reference to the private schools

---

1. 1st T.R. 1876, P.5 & 6. 2. IBID. 3. IBID.  
4. In 1883-84 there were 18, although it is probable that several were not elementary in character. Ward's Directory of Newcastle and Gateshead 1883-84.

the Board stated, in 1882<sup>(1)</sup> that many parents were indifferent to the education of those children in private elementary schools, and described the problem as "still acute".

The problem remained although it slowly diminished, as time progressed and as the worth of board schools became more widely recognised, but the real blow at the private elementary schools, whose numbers fell markedly in the 1890's, was the progressive introduction of free education in most schools from 1891 onwards. However, the private schools were tenacious and in 1903-04 there were still two in existence.

Another problem affecting attendance was the employment of schoolchildren in industry. In February 1874 the summoning officer reported that a number of children under 13 were employed. He stated that:

"the workmen at one set of the Glass Houses no sooner get one set of boys from them than their places are filled by others." (2)

At the same meeting, the Relief Committee stated that the wages paid to boys of ten and over was one of the main causes of irregular attendance. The summoning officer and the Relief Committee both suggested that the Board should publish

---

1. 3rd T.R. 1882, P.14. 2. S.B.M. Vol.B, P.27

notices warning tradesmen not to employ children under the age of 13.

The Board acted on this recommendation and a month later it was reported that tradesmen were avoiding employing children under 13. By 1877, however, the problem had arisen again, for, in February, <sup>(1)</sup> the School Management Committee reported that several children of school age were being employed in contravention of the Education Act 1876<sup>(2)</sup> and one presumes in contravention of the Mines and Factories Acts. No further evidence of child employment is available presumably because, as time went on, the machinery of the byelaws to enforce attendance proved effective.

Obviously it would have been pointless to have a summoning officer to report on non-attendance without the powers and machinery to compel attendance. Consequently the Board, using the powers permitted by the 1870 Act, adopted a complete set of byelaws in June 1871, <sup>(3)</sup> and submitted them to the Education Department. Several objections were made. Revised byelaws were accepted by the Board, on 14th February 1872, <sup>(4)</sup> and accepted by the Education Department in July. <sup>(5)</sup> The byelaws consisted of seven major clauses and covered every topic

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.B, P.419.

2. Education Act 1876 said that no child under 10 could be employed and no child between 10-14 unless he had passed Standard IV.

Smith, History of English Elementary Education 1760-1902, P.296.

3. S.B.M. Vol. A, P.68.

4. S.B.M. Vol.A, P.118.

5. IBID, P.178.

permitted by the 1870 Act: religious observance and instruction remission of fees in needy cases, attendance at school and the procedure to be followed and penalties to be imposed in cases of non-attendance. The byelaws were revised in February 1878,<sup>(1)</sup> to speed up the process of law against persistent offenders, and further revisions were made whenever a change in Statute law necessitated a change in the byelaws.

The application of the byelaws by the Board and its officials aided, where necessary, by the magistrates, certainly did much to increase the average attendance (See Appendix No.8) in voluntary as well as Board schools.

Soon after the byelaws were accepted the Board resolved in October 1872:

"that the byelaw of the Board which requires attendance of children at school be put into force."<sup>(2)</sup>

At the same meeting, the Board also decided unanimously:

"that a committee be appointed to carry out the provisions of byelaw No.5 which provides for the remission or payment by the School Board of school fees in cases of poverty, that such committee be open to every member of the Board and that 3 form a quorum."<sup>(3)</sup>

The Relief Committee, thus established, proceeded to remit the fees of a large number of children for periods of up to

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.217.
  2. S.B.M. Vol.A, P.212.
  3. IBID.

six months at a time. However, in December 1872, the Board revised byelaw No.5<sup>(1)</sup> in accordance with the following motion:

"that the clause in byelaw No.5 which makes it necessary that a parent must have been served with a notice to send his or her child to school before he or she can claim remission or payment of school fees be and is hereby expunged, ..... (2)

The 25th clause of the 1870 Act, which permitted school boards to remit school fees, was repealed by the Education Act of 1876. Under the new act the remission procedure was altered; the power to remit school fees was vested in the Poor Law Guardians. In Gateshead a joint committee of School Board Members and Guardians was established to decide on remission cases and the Board's summoning officers were appointed as inquiry officers for the Guardians. The system thus established continued until 1903.

Some idea of the Board's exercise of its powers to secure regular attendance can be obtained from the following tables:

(3)

Year	Notices Served	Brought Before:		Fined	Committed To:		Withdrawn or Dismissed
		Board	Magistrates		Industrial School	Training Ship	
1874	170	90	12	12	-	-	-
1875	707	299	153	138	5	-	10
1876	840	551	159	135	11	2	11
1877	1,462	Summons Cases		612	8	7	30
1878	1,965	658					
1879	1,507						

1. Sec.5 Clause 74 of 1870 Act permitted a school board "to revoke or alter any byelaw previously made".
2. S.B.M. Vol.A, P.233.
3. Compiled from 2nd and 3rd Triennial Reports.

(1)

	1883	1884	1885	Totals
Parents Summoned	663	744	474	1,881
Children	818	870	574	2,262
Fined - 1/-	80	266	173	519
1/6d	-	2	-	2
2/-	10	24	7	41
2/6d	259	89	35	383
3/-	-	2	1	3
5/-	44	8	1	53
Attendance Orders	136	224	159	519
to Day Industrial School	63	67	46	176
to Industrial School	8	5	2	15
Dismissed or Withdrawn	79	77	67	223

Remittance of Fees for a Limited Period.

(2)

Year	No. of Applicants	In Respect of No. of Children
1877	516	1,290
1878	908	2,270
1879	959	2,397

During the period 1879-1882, the average number of children attending Board Schools weekly, under remission orders fluctuated from 630 in 1879 to 249 in 1882<sup>(3)</sup> Between 1882-85 the number rose to a maximum of 1,015 in March 1885.<sup>(4)</sup>

Although the Board remitted fees in needy cases and adopted punitive measures when necessary, in 1876, it was felt that some incentive was needed to encourage attendance, therefore a prize scheme was started, in midsummer of that year, for pupils

- 
1. 4th T.R. 1885.
  2. 2nd T.R. 1879.
  3. 4th T.R. 1885, P.17.
  4. IBID.

in regular attendance; 380 out of 400 attendances and a pass in two subjects was required to qualify for a prize.(1)

Each child was given a card for completing a whole week's attendance and a certain percentage of cards qualified the holder for a prize. The value of each prize, which was a book, was laid down as follows:(2)

Infants		3d.
Standards I & II		9d.
"	III & IV	1/6d.
"	V & VI	2/6d.

The prize distribution was held annually in Saltwell Park or the Town Hall, and was made an occasion for advertising to the inhabitants of the Borough the benefits of Board school education.

Of all the measures adopted to stimulate school attendance, the most effective was the introduction of free education. School boards were empowered by Section 26 of the 1870 Act to provide free education, but none did; until the 1891 Education Act forced their hands. The Act offered a fee grant of 10/- per child in average attendance, on certain conditions. If the fee previously charged totalled less than 10/- in a year and the fee grant was accepted, then no charge whatever could be made, but, if the fee totalled more than 10/-

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.B, P.291.
  2. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.67.

and the fee grant was accepted, then the difference only could be charged. No fees were permitted in new schools except in very special circumstances.(1)

The Board accepted the fee grant for all Gateshead schools, with the result that the following schools became absolutely free:(2)

<u>School</u>	<u>Accommodation</u>
Prior Street	1,341
Oakwellgate	789
Redheugh	800
Victoria	1,020
Sheriff Hill	500
Wrekenton	120
Windmill Hills (Infants)	701
Ellison	161
Grant Street	200
Low Fell	150
Mount Pleasant	152
Pipewellgate	150

At the same time, reduced fees were charged in the following schools:(3)

Higher Grade School	1,020
Alexandra Road	1,121
Durham Road	910
Sunderland Road	1,050
Askew Road	837

Subsequently the fees were further reduced and Askew Road became free.(4) By 1900 Sunderland Road was also made free(5) The result, as might be expected, was a significant increase in attendance (see Appendix No.8)

- 
1. Birchenough. History of English Elementary Education from 1800 to present Day. P.161.
  2. 7th T.R. 1894, P.12.
  3. IBID.
  4. 8th T.R. 1897, P.13.
  5. 9th T.R. 1900, P.16.

CHAPTER VI

The Day Industrial School

The provision of public elementary schools being well in hand, in 1877, the Board turned its attention to providing accommodation for "neglected and indigent children".

In February, (1) Mr. Elsdon introduced a motion to establish a day industrial school. On an amendment a committee of the whole Board was appointed to consider the question. In June Mr. Elsdon introduced the following motion:

"that the officers be and are hereby instructed to furnish this Board at the next meeting, in August, with a return of neglected and indigent children resident within the district of the Board who may be considered fitting subjects for a day industrial school..." (2)

At the August meeting a special committee was appointed to report on the establishment of such a school.

A day industrial school was defined in Section 16 of the Elementary Education Act of 1876 as a school "in which industrial training, elementary education and one or more meals a day, but not lodging are provided for the children". (3)

Such a school could be certified by the Home Secretary, under

---

1. S.B.M. Vol. B.P.420.  
 2. S.B.M. Vol. C.P.28.  
 3. IBID P.177.

the Industrial Schools Act, 1866, where the circumstances of the population rendered it necessary. Finally, a day industrial school could be established by a school board, or by a voluntary agency.

In September, the committee reported that a school for 200 children was required, and the Board sanctioned the committee to look for eligible sites.<sup>(1)</sup> Two months later, in November, the committee reported on five possible sites. One of them "a piece of land known as Freeman's site adjoining the Windmill Hills" was decided upon and the Board decided to obtain the approval of the Secretary of State Home Department for a day industrial school to be built on the site.<sup>(2)</sup>

Thomas Oliver was appointed architect for the scheme in December and instructed to prepare plans, not only for the day industrial school, but for an infants school for 200 children and for a plunge bath to adjoin it.<sup>(3)</sup>

So that the Board could choose the most suitable design for the school a deputation consisting of Dr. Banning, Mr. W.B. Elsdon<sup>(4)</sup> and the vice chairman was appointed to visit one or more day industrial schools and collect all possible information on the subject.

---

1. S.R.M. Vol C P.84.      2. IBID P.128-131.      3. IBID P.154.  
 4. Mr. Elsdon's appointment became significant in 1884-85, by which time he had resigned from the Board. See Pages 103-104

The deputation, advised by the inspectorate of industrial schools, visited schools, in Birmingham, Bristol and London. <sup>(1)</sup> In Birmingham they visited the Gem Street Industrial School and learnt that the Birmingham School Board had virtually decided not to establish a day industrial school, hoping to place all children in ordinary elementary schools. The London School Board had also decided not to establish any; chiefly because of the number that would have been necessary in the metropolis. Only in Bristol, where they visited St. James' Back Industrial School and the Girls' Industrial School, Coatham Road, did the deputation find a Board which proposed to establish three or four day industrial schools in various parts of the city "if the present one is successful as it bids fair to be". <sup>(2)</sup>

The deputation's report <sup>(3)</sup>, based on the experience of the school boards visited, was not conclusively in favour of day industrial schools yet it strongly recommended the establishment of one in Gateshead. First it posed the question whether it would be cheaper to establish an ordinary industrial school or a day industrial school. Answering this question the report said no authentic evidence of the cost of a day industrial school existed, but it had been calculated "by a

---

1. Committee's Report S.B.M. Vol.C.P.170-183.

2. S.B.M. Vol.C. P.170-183.

3. IBID.

competent authority" (unnamed) that when the capital charges had been defrayed the cost of maintenance would be 3/- per week, or £7. 16s 0d per annum, per child. Under existing regulations, the Treasury would give grants under three heads; attendance, proficiency and discipline, and organisation amounting to £2. 12. 0. per annum per child, under the most favourable circumstances. The parents of children attending the school could be charged to contribute 2/- per week or £5 4. 0. per annum; if the parents were unable to pay they could apply to the Poor Law Guardians for assistance. The grant and parental contributions therefore could equal the cost of maintenance and if the industry carried on was remunerative then a profit might be made.

What of less favourable circumstances which were more likely to prevail? The report pointed out that the ordinary cost per child ought not to exceed 1/- per week. Considerable difficulty could be experienced in collecting fees; in Bristol the cost of collection was almost equal to the fees collected, but it was added;

"the authorities quite rightly insist on payment"<sup>(1)</sup>

It was unlikely that the maximum grant would be earned and another point was that a child could only be sent to a day industrial school within two miles of his home. This final point automatically excluded some Gateshead children from attendance.

---

1. Committee's report S.B.M. Vol.C.P.170-183.

Despite the reservations implicit in the report the committee recommended that a day industrial school should be established. It was to comprise a good ordinary schoolroom, with not less than 4 classrooms, one of which was to accommodate at least 60 children and to be fitted with a gallery. Special amenities for an industrial school includes a light and airy dining room which would also serve as a work-room for the girls; a superintendent's house which was to be an integral part of the building and a large and convenient kitchen and scullery. No workshop was to be erected except a shed for wood-chopping and a wash-house for laundry work. Ample lavatories and two baths, both with hot water were to be provided. Finally, a covered shed for the use of the infants and girls, in wet weather, was to be erected.

The report's final statement, that the Day Industrial School "with a reasonable amount of care will not require any considerable subsidy from the ordinary funds of the Board .... and will be fraught with most beneficial results,"<sup>(1)</sup> was based more on Victorian optimism than on established fact. In practice, the school required a subsidy nearly every year from the Board's general fund.

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.182.

The Board's decision was postponed until the February meeting, when, having decided to establish a day industrial school, application was made to the Secretary of State Home Department asking him to recommend a loan of £3,600 for the school site.(1)

The plans were sent to the Home Department in May 1878. In June, the Education Department said it was not satisfied with the area allotted to the proposed infants' school (about  $\frac{1}{8}$  of an acre) and asked for the area to be increased to about a  $\frac{1}{4}$  of an acre.(2) If additional space could not be allotted, then the Education Department said the infants' school should be dealt with separately and the Home Secretary's approval sought for the day industrial school only. The Board therefore decided to delete the infants' school from its plans and look for another site for it, nearby.

The Secretary of State Home Department then approved the plans for the day industrial school and the infants' school, with the proviso that some alterations would be necessary as no infants' school was now to be built.(3) In August revised plans, which would save approximately £1,000, were submitted to the Home Department.(4)

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.209.
  2. IBID, P.292.
  3. IBID, P.296.
  4. IBID, P.336.

Negotiations for the erection of the Day Industrial school continued during the Autumn of 1878. In September, the Public Works Loan Board approved the February application for a loan for the industrial school and infants' school site, but, in view of the Education Department's opposition, two separate loans were applied for in December 1878;(1) one for the day industrial school and the other for the infants' school.

The School Board was obviously pleased with its idea of building a day industrial school because Lord Sandon, Vice President of the Committee of Council on Education and author of the 1876 Education Act, was invited to lay the foundation stone. He declined. W.E. Forster, the father of the 1870 Education Act, was the next eminent figure to be invited. He declined in May. Finally, on 5 June 1879 the Mayor of Gateshead laid the foundation stone.(2)

The failure to obtain a national figure to lay the foundation stone and the performance of the ceremony by a local personality seems to symbolise the history of the school. The Board's early enthusiasm for its project was not maintained and the foundation, for which a glowing future had been painted by the committee, was never as successful as had been hoped.

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.396.  
2. 2nd T.R. 1879, P.21.

The first note of doubt was sounded in 1879 when the Board said that the Day Industrial school:

"has been so constructed, that, should it happily be found hereafter not to be required as a Day Industrial School, it may be converted, at a very small cost, into an ordinary Elementary school." (1)

This statement becomes more significant in the light of future developments when it became obvious that some Board members were having second thoughts about the wisdom of establishing the school.

Evidence to support this opinion is to be found in the early months of 1880 when the school was in course of erection. In January 1880, it was proposed that the Home Secretary should be asked for permission to convert the day industrial school into an ordinary elementary school. (2) The voting on this motion is interesting; of the ten members present, five voted in favour and five against. However, the motion was lost on the casting vote of the Chairman, who had already cast a vote against the motion. (3)

In February 1880, (4) a deputation of ratepayers waited on the Board with reference to the Day Industrial school. Although the deputation's case is not actually stated in the minutes, it can be inferred from a letter (5) sent to the Board by the

- 
1. 2nd T.R. 1879, P.21.
  2. S.B.M. Vol.D, P.110.
  3. At the February meeting another motion to convert D.I.S. into elementary school lost on Chairman's casting vote.
  4. S.B.M. Vol.D, P.128.
  5. IBID, P.213.

Inspector of Reformatory and Industrial Schools, stating that the Home Secretary had been memorialised, by some Gateshead ratepayers with the request that the Day Industrial school should be converted into an ordinary elementary school. He asked for the Board's opinion on the subject.

The Board replied, somewhat tersely in the circumstances, that the subject had been discussed recently and it had been resolved to give the school a try. Unanimity in the face of outside interference was the keynote of the reply, no mention being made of the narrow margin by which, on two occasions, it had been resolved to continue.

The school was opened in October 1880 when seven pupils were admitted.<sup>(1)</sup> This number had increased to ten by November, all under detention orders. Development continued. In March 1881, an assistant teacher was appointed, although the appointment was only made by the Chairman's casting vote.<sup>(2)</sup> It would seem that a hard core of Board members were not in favour of the school's expansion and were doing their best to prevent it.

Doubts about the school's continuance were raised again in October 1881, when a special committee was appointed to "see

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.D, P.260.  
2. IBID. P.322.

if it is expedient to continue the experiment of the Day Industrial School."<sup>(1)</sup> The Committee reported in November that it was unable to "advise any change"; a decision unanimously agreed to.<sup>(2)</sup>

So far the opposition to the Day Industrial School had foundered on the rock of the Chairman's casting vote. Indeed it seemed, in view of the November decision to continue the school, that the Board had closed its divided ranks. The forces of the anti-day industrial school faction, however, were planning a new form of attack, which succeeded in making the first breach in the defences of the pro-industrial school group.

In January 1882,<sup>(3)</sup> it was proposed that a conference should be held with the managers of the Abbott Memorial school and the Wellesley Training Ship<sup>(4)</sup> about reserving some places in them exclusively for Gateshead children "with the view of discontinuing the present Day Industrial School." The motion was carried by 5 votes to 4.

What action was taken is not known, but the school continued. In June it was inspected. The report was favourable and the results good.

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.D, P.446.

2. IBID. P.456.

3. S.B.M. Vol.E, P.2.

4. Two private venture industrial schools; the former in Gateshead, the latter at Blyth.

Another attack was made on the school in March 1883 when it was proposed:

"That considering the exceptional facilities with which Gateshead is provided for dealing with idle children ..... the maintenance of the Day Industrial School should cease; and that the building be devoted to the purposes of Advanced (elementary) Education.

That therefore this Board resolves to give notice in writing at once to H.M. Secretary of State of its intention to resign the certificate of the said Day Industrial school in accordance with the requirement ending such notice." (1)

Consideration of the motion was postponed for six months. Actually it was over twelve months before it was reconsidered. In April 1884 a motion was put forward to inform the Secretary of State of the Board's intention to resign the certificate of the Day Industrial school and, at the end of six months to convert the Day Industrial school into a Higher Grade School.(2)

As the Education Department had only approved the Higher Grade school premises for a limited period, the Board decided to consider what alterations would be required to enable the two schools to exchange premises. Plans for the alterations were made and approved by the Board in July, when it was decided to obtain the Home Secretary's consent to transfer the Day Industrial school from the current to the proposed premises.(3)

- 
1. Motion originally mooted in February when term Higher (elementary) Education had been used. S.B.M. Vol.E, P.282-283.
  2. S.B.M. Vol.F, P.32.
  3. IBID, P.106.

The decision to effect the exchange was taken in September, when the following recommendation of the School Management Committee was ratified:

"The committee have had before them a letter (contents unstated) from H.M. Inspector of Industrial Schools relative to the proposed transfer and they now recommend that the transfer be carried out at once ....."(1)

The transfer was put into effect at the end of September, but the Board by so doing had "jumped the gun."

At its October meeting the Board considered another letter from the Inspector of Industrial Schools accompanied by a copy of a letter which had been sent to the inspector, by W.B. Elsdon Esq.(2) Mr. Elsdon had resigned from the School Board in July 1879 but had retained an interest in the educational welfare of the town. The inspector's letter asked the Board to justify its decision to exchange the premises of the two schools. Mr. Elsdon's letter outlined the form of the Day Industrial school, stated that he had assisted in its foundation and went on to say that:

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.F, P.133.
  2. A member of the original Committee which had recommended the Day Industrial School in 1877.

"Such day industrial school was never popular among the ratepaying classes of an abnormal economic state of mind, and more especially among those who are favoured with a seat on the Town Council or on the Board of the Gateshead Poor Law Union." (1)

The letter suggested that it would be more economical to build a new Higher Grade school than to transfer the two schools. Mr. Elsdon concluded by requesting a public inquiry.

Although of interest because of the views expressed and because of Mr. Elsdon's close association with the industrial school in its early stages, the real value of the letter lies in the fact that it focussed the attention of the national authorities on the Board's sudden and unauthorised exchange of the two schools.

In November, (2) the Day Industrial school was reported to be working satisfactorily in its new premises, but the storm over the transfer was about to develop, and the Board was to be left in no doubt of the Education and Home Departments' displeasure before they accepted "de jure" what had already been accomplished "de facto".

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.F, P.159. In view of Mr. Elsdon's comments the following quotation from a letter on Gateshead Rates makes interesting reading:  
 "I think that a reduction in the rates of Gateshead is only to be made by all the local authorities in future reducing .... their expenditure and not spending the public money, as has been done by the School Board in constructing the Day Industrial School; the Corporation in the erection of a public library and the new quay...." N.C. Tyneside Echo 15/4/84.  
 Perhaps Mr. Elsdon's remarks about "an abnormal economic state of mind among the ratepaying classes" had some justification.
  2. S.B.M. Vol.F, P.178.

The first into the field was the Home Department which informed the Board, in December, (1) that the Secretary of State was dissatisfied with the Board's procedure over the transfer. It was pointed out that the Inspector of Industrial Schools had agreed in principle to the proposed transfer, but he had required some modification of the plans. The Board had modified the plans, but had effected the transfer before the plans had been finally approved. The Secretary of State said that the Board's action had been "high-handed, irregular and not justified on the (basis of its) communication with the inspector, who did not know what had been done . . . . and in face of the appeal by Mr. Elsdon against the proposed arrangements." The Secretary of State pointed out that the Board had committed the following irregularities:

- "1. The Day Industrial School had been temporarily suspended (during the transfer) contrary to the undertaking of the managers to provide for the children during the terms of their detention.
2. The Day Industrial school was being carried on in an uncertified building.
3. The former premises, on which a loan had been made by the Public Works Loan Commissioners for one purpose had now been converted to another. This fact had been communicated to the Loan Commissioners and the whole case had been laid before the Education Department. "

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.F, P.206-209. Letter from Secretary of State Home Department.

The Board had not long to wait for the Education Department's reaction. On the 15 December, a letter<sup>(1)</sup> was received from Patrick Cumin pointing out the Department's displeasure at the Board's action. Such proposal, the letter stated, would have been entertained and sanctioned, subject to the authority of the Departments concerned, but the transfer had been effected without authority and the irregularities were grave. The Board was told to obtain the consent of the Home Department to the transfer; until such consent was obtained, the Education Department was unable to recognise the premises now occupied by the Higher Grade school which had not yet been placed on the grant list. In consequence, the Board members would be surcharged with any expenditure on this school out of the rates.

Application was made to the Home Department for recognition of the new premises, and in February 1985 the formal certificate was received.<sup>(2)</sup> The situation was therefore regularised and each school settled satisfactorily in its new premises.

The average attendance of the Day Industrial school was never high, as the following table illustrates:

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.F, P.230. Education Dept. letter.
  2. S.B.M. Vol.G, P.249.

(1)

Year	Average Attendance:	
	Qtr. Ending 30 June	Qtr. Ending 31 Dec.
1880	-	15
1881	51	86
1882	86	-
1884	-	85
1885	84	83
1886	87	72
1887	75	67
1888	73	78
1889	-	93
1891	96	-
1892	95	-
1893	83	-
1894	64	-

The standard of the school, however, was high as is witnessed by the reports of the Home Office Inspectors on their annual visits. In 1886, Mr. Rogers expressed himself well satisfied with the school:

"The school as a place of education is a distinct success, the work is most carefully and accurately done - all that is attempted is well done. This great lesson of painstaking and accuracy is most valuable to the children dealt with.

There has only been one failure in one subject throughout the school today. There are 97 present today and 75 were presented for examination. (2)

I am pleased to find that some valuable industrial work has been introduced.

The children all behaved remarkably well. The reading and recitation were a real pleasure for a cultivated ear to listen to. " (3)

1. Compiled from: 3 TR 1882, P.16; 4 TR 1885, P.14; 5 TR 1888 P.19; S.B.M. Vol.H, P.441 and Vol.M, P.47.
2. 11 in Standard V; 10 in Std.IV; 17 in Std.III; 19 in Std.II  
18 in Std.I. S.B.M. Vol.G, P.80-81.
3. IBID.

This was high praise indeed from an inspector.

Similar praise was forthcoming in 1887 when the results were even better. 84 children were on the books, 82 were presented for examination and 100% pass was obtained. With reference to the children this inspector said:

".....the greatest pains are taken with them to give them the elements of sound educational training. Nothing can exceed the accuracy and exactness attained. Everything attempted is well done, I may say, exceptionally well done. The reading is superior, some of it excellent." (1)

In 1888, the Board sounded a warning about the school's future:

"Happily the number of children rendering necessary the existence of Industrial Schools is likely to decrease and it may be necessary to somewhat vary the present arrangements of the school." (2)

No change was made, however, until 1894 when a committee was set up to enquire into the financial condition of the Day Industrial School. In July, (3) the committee reported that in the previous year £409. 0. 11d. had been required from the rates to balance the accounts and in the current year £500 would probably be needed. The reasons for the increased expenditure were that the staff, while not excessive, were all on maximum

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.G, P.304.
  2. 5th T.R. 1888, P.19.
  3. S.B.M. Vol.L, P.307-308.

salary; profits from sales had decreased - sack-making having virtually ceased; for years difficulties had been experienced in recovering payments from parents, and the number of children committed by the magistrates had been decreasing. The increased number of infants' schools had cut off the supply and the Free Education Act had tended to remove the main excuse of parents for not sending their children to school. The committee therefore wondered if the school's certificate should be resigned, because the limited number of children requiring the discipline of an industrial school, could be sent to the Abbott Memorial School, The Wellesley Training Ship, the Chadwick or some other industrial school. Finally, the committee pointed out that the reduction in numbers attending was not confined to the Gateshead Day Industrial school, but was being experienced in several towns.

Copies of the report were sent to all the members of the Board, and in July it was referred back to the Board's October meeting.

On October 10 1894, the report was duly considered, and a proposal was made to inform the Home Secretary of the Board's intention to resign the certificate. However an amendment to defer a decision until the new Board had been elected

---

(an election was due in November) was carried on the Chairman's casting vote.(1)

The new Board did not consider the position of the Day Industrial School until 20 March 1895, when it accepted the report and a proposal that the school should be closed.(2)

In May 1895, it was reported that the resignation of the certificate had been accepted by the Home Secretary, therefore, the staff were informed that the school would be terminated as from 29th September 1895(3)

The school actually closed on 28 September 1895. Miss McQuaker, the headmistress, declined the Board's offer of alternative employment, but Mr. Burns, the assistant master, was retained in the Board's employ.(4)

The final chapter in the history of the Day Industrial School was recorded in June 1896, when the Board, having considered certain arrears of uncollected fees of children formerly attending the school, having obtained the approval of the Secretary of State Home Department, and having satisfied themselves that the fees were irrecoverable, wrote off the said fees.(5)

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.L, P.383.
  2. S.B.M. Vol.M, P.47.
  3. IBID, P.83.
  4. IBID, P.229.
  5. IBID, P.443.

After the school closed, the premises were used as temporary accommodation for the overflow of infants from Windmill Hills school. Subsequently they were used as the School Board's Offices until the new ones were built in 1899. In October 1899 the Board decided to sell the premises, but prospective deals fell through and finally, in September 1900, they were leased for 3 years to the Church Army for £40 p.a., with the option of purchase at the end of that time.<sup>(1)</sup>

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.P, P.397.

CHAPTER VIIThe Higher Grade Schools

Provision of a Higher Grade School was first mooted in March 1880 when the School Supply Committee suggested building "a higher class board school" as near as possible to the junction of the old and new Durham Roads.<sup>(1)</sup> The Committee believed that "such a school would be received with great favour and fill a want long felt by a considerable proportion of the population".<sup>(2)</sup> It said that the school pence and the government grant would possibly cover the cost of maintenance and the amount required for the repayment of principal and loan interest.

The report was accepted by the Board, but, since no further discussion is noted in the minutes and no further steps taken to provide the school at this time, it can be assumed that the report was not proceeded with.

The next reference to the subject is to be found in May 1883,<sup>(3)</sup> when a committee was appointed to discover whether it would be possible to establish a school exclusively for the higher standards. Presumably at this stage there was no intention that the school should be anything but an elementary school teaching say Standards IV and above.

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.D, P.138.
  2. IBID.
  3. S.B.M. Vol.E, P.323.

On 13 June, the committee reported that a Higher Grade school should be established.<sup>(1)</sup> It proposed that the school should be for boys and girls, that, in compliance with the Board's policy it should be opened in temporary premises, that the ordinary school fees should be 9d per week,<sup>(2)</sup> that a headmaster should be appointed at a salary of £200 and such proportion of the grants as would raise the salary to £300, but that a minimum salary of £250 should be guaranteed for the first year. Finally, the committee requested the Board to obtain the Education Department's consent to the establishment and maintenance of a Higher Grade School.

The proposals were forwarded to the Education Department the next day. On the 25 July, the Department replied that it was prepared to consider favourably the establishment of a Higher Grade School.<sup>(3)</sup> The Board immediately took steps to acquire two houses, in Freeman's Terrace, which were converted for use as a school.

It had been the Board's intention to open the school in January 1884, however, it was not until the 21 January that the headmaster, a Mr. M.R. Wright of Sheffield, was appointed.<sup>(4)</sup> The rest of the staff were not appointed until the 13 February when two certificated assistant masters, Mr. George Hill of Greenwich and Mr. Frederick Walters, from the Board's own school

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.E, P.361-362.
  2. February 1884 fees fixed at 9d per week + 3d per week for books. S.B.M. Vol.E, P.504.
  3. S.B.M. Vol.E, P.420.
  4. Subsequently Professor Mark R. Wright, Emeritus Professor of Education, King's College, Newcastle.

at Sheriff Hill, and a certificated assistant mistress, Miss A.S. Blunden of Birmingham, were appointed.<sup>(1)</sup>

Meanwhile, on the 9 January, the Board had received a deputation of representatives of the Congregational<sup>(2)</sup> and Wesleyan schools in the Borough. The supporters of these schools were obviously disturbed by the possibility of the Higher Grade school attracting many of their more able, senior pupils as the deputation requested the Board to restrict the proposed Higher Grade School to children who had passed Standard VI.<sup>(3)</sup> The Board gave no immediate answer, but discussed the request on 21 January. The decision, which was communicated to the deputation, was that children above Standard IV were to be admitted.

The Higher Grade opened, in temporary premises, in March 1884. In September 1884, however, it exchanged premises with the Day Industrial School,<sup>(4)</sup> Having settled into its more spacious premises the school expanded, as the following table shows:

(5)

Average Attendance at H.G.S. (Last week in September)	
1884	275
1885	323
1886	400
1887	407
1888	414

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.E, P.503.
  2. Established in 1876.
  3. S.B.M. Vol.E, P.480.
  4. Fully documented in Chapter. VI, P.102-106.
  5. 5th T.R. 1888. P.8.

The pupils were drawn from all the schools in the town as the Board decided that the school should be one:

".... at which not merely a higher fee is charged but also (one) in which instruction should be given only in the higher standards and to which the more advanced scholars should be drafted from the different schools in the town." (1)

To assist able pupils to attend the school, competitive scholarships were instituted in 1884; the scholarships, to be financed by voluntary subscription, were awarded on the following conditions.

The scholarships would be worth £2. 2. Od. per annum inclusive of books and fees, and would be open to children resident in the borough. They would be tenable for one year but could be renewed for a second and third year, subject to a satisfactory report from the headmaster. Candidates had to be under 13 on the last day of the month preceding the examination, had to have passed the Vth standard<sup>(2)</sup> and had to provide a certificate of good conduct from his headmaster. The examination, which was to be conducted by the headmaster of the Higher Grade School, was to consist of the following subjects:

- (a) Reading, Dictation, Composition and Arithmetic.
- (b) English Grammar.
- (c) History or Geography or Needlework.

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.E, P.418. In later minutes there is a slight evidence that pupils not resident in Gateshead attended Higher Grade School. S.B.M. Vol.G, P.105 - one girl from Newcastle school awarded a scholarship in 1886. S.B.M. Vol.M.1896 similar evidence occurs.
  2. Raised to VIth Standard 1892. S.B.M. Vol.K, P.105.

In June 1884, the first examination was held. Two hundred candidates competed, and fifteen scholarships were awarded.<sup>(1)</sup> Mr. Wright said the scholarships were a great boon to the brightest pupils in Standard VI and VII and were an incentive for them to remain.<sup>(2)</sup>

Over the years the voluntary subscriptions and donations to the scholarship fund continued, and the number of scholarships gradually increased, until, by 1902, one hundred scholarships were awarded in the Intermediate Higher Grade School and a similar number in the Senior School.<sup>(3)</sup>

The next step, in the school's development, was the construction of a chemical laboratory in 1885 at a cost of £156. 17. Od. A grant of £75 was received, from the Science and Art Department, towards the cost after Mr. Buckmaster had pronounced it satisfactory.<sup>(4)</sup>

Up to 1886, the Higher Grade School appears to have provided an elementary education above Standard IV and to have taught certain science and art subjects, the students earning grants from both the Education Department and the Science and Art Department.

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.F, P.273-275.
  2. IBID.
  3. S.B.M. Vol.P, P.346.
  4. S.B.M. Vol.F, P.461.

In 1886, however, the Board agreed to a suggestion made by the Science and Art Department and converted the Higher Grade school into an organised science school.(1)

After 1886, presumably, elementary, class and specific subjects of the Education Department's Code were taught in the requisite standards. The science and art curricula, taught in addition, can be deduced from published examination results. The table overleaf gives some idea of the development of science in the school and of the results obtained:

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.F, P.60.

The increasing number of successes in science examinations must indicate that an even larger number of students were studying the subjects listed. They also indicate that good use was being made of the laboratory.

Another table illustrates the range of drawing subjects taught in the school:

(1)

SUBJECT	HIGHER GRADE SCHOOL 2nd GRADE ART RESULTS							
	1885		1886		1887		1888	
	1st	2nd	1st	2nd	1st	2nd	1st	2nd
Freehand	1	5		10	1	6	1	13
Geometry	1	1		5	5	21	-	20
Model					3		1	3
Perspective					1	1	5	6
TOTALS	2	6		15	10	28	7	42

The quality of the work is borne out by the Chairman's statement, in 1887, that the Higher Grade School fully justified its establishment; the net results, including the Science and Art grants and a proportion of the special grant, showing that the school was actually a source of profit.<sup>(2)</sup>

In 1888, it was stated that the girls would soon need a separate department, so as to receive adequate preparation if they wished to become teachers in elementary schools.

---

1. 5th TR 1888 P.9.

2. S.B.M. Vol.F.P.345.

The need for grounding boys in physical science, drawing and commercial instruction was also noted.<sup>(1)</sup>

From 1886 French was obviously taught, as a French teacher, appointed at first on probation, was made a permanent member of staff. Manual instruction was taught from 1888, when Mr. Onions<sup>(2)</sup> was appointed to teach the subject. So successful was its introduction that manual instruction was established in several elementary schools from 1890.

In 1889, because Alexandra Road and Durham Road schools were extremely overcrowded, temporary accommodation was secured for the overflow from Durham Road and consideration given to enlarging Alexandra Road school. In December, the Building Committee reported that it was desirable to build a school for 900-1000 pupils on a site offered by Lord Northbourne in<sup>(3)</sup> Whitehall Road. Plans were drawn up for the school to be built in three units, either separately or concurrently. The cost, exclusive of site, was not to exceed £6 per scholar. Education Department approval was received in May, when it was decided to build all three units immediately. A tender for £5,693. 0. 0. was accepted in June. In July, the Board received a pleasant surprise when it learnt that the vendor of the 2 acre site, the Hon. W.H. James, M.P., was willing to sell the site for £1,750 (the market being £1,000 per acre) and that he intended

---

1. 5th TR 1888 p.8.      2. S.B.M. Vol.H. P.48.  
3. S.B.M. Vol.H. P.418.

to return £500 to the Board to endow scholarships for the Higher Grade school.<sup>(1)</sup> Naturally the Board accepted the offer with alacrity.

Building soon commenced, and several alterations were made to the original plans which were providential in view of the decision, taken in March 1891, to use the new buildings for the Higher Grade school.<sup>(2)</sup> The current Higher Grade premises on Windmill Hills were too small and being fairly near to the new schools would be able to alleviate the overcrowding for which the new schools had been planned.

The decision was a sound one as the Whitehall Road school, as well as being larger than the current Higher Grade school, was being built to a more modern design which would be suited to a more advanced form of education. Several alterations again had to be made, the most important of which was the building of a laboratory.

Application was made to the Education Department, in July 1891, for a loan to build the new laboratory and to the Science and Art Department for a grant for the fixtures and fittings. Early in 1892 the Science and Art Department informed the Board that no grant for new laboratory fittings could be made after the end of March, and the work must be completed by the

---

1. S.B.M. Vol. J. P. 101.  
2. IBID following P. 295.



A physics laboratory was added to the Whitehall Road school in 1895.<sup>(1)</sup>

By 1897, the Board was considering the problem of providing science instruction for the Higher Grade school girls. A suggestion to convert the Durham Road school into a second organised science school was turned down, because it would have meant duplication of facilities and would have been inefficient.

The plan adopted was to reorganise the two Higher Grade schools as follows:<sup>(2)</sup>

Organised science school	}	Durham Road
and possibly one standard		
Junior school	}	Whitehall Road
Intermediate school		

Mr. Bidgood<sup>(3)</sup>, the headmaster of the science school, suggested that the school should contain 240 boys and 160 girls. He estimated that the addition of 80 girls, in the first year, would produce £300 in grants while 160 girls in subsequent years could earn over £600 p.a.<sup>(4)</sup>

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.N.P.167.

2. S.B.M. Vol.N. P.239.

3. In 1890 Mr. M.R. Wright appointed first principal of the Day Training College, Newcastle. Mr. John Bidgood B.Sc. succeeded him.

4. S.B.M. Vol.N.P.239.

In July 1897, the detailed organisation was finalised. The senior organised science school was to contain all the boys above standard VI and all the girls in standard VII; a total of about 400 pupils. The intermediate school was for standards III to VI and contained about 600 pupils. The junior school, therefore, contained only the first two standards. (1)

The staff of the senior school was one headmaster, ten male assistants and two female assistants; sufficient to limit the classes to 40 pupils each, as laid down by the Science and Art Department. (2)

Apart from the headmaster one other member of staff, Mr. Lewins, possessed a B.Sc. degree, and it is assumed that all the teachers were qualified, to teach students for grants from the Science and Art Department, as most of them had been taking science or art evening classes for a number of years and were paid the higher salary scales which were in force at the Higher Grade school for those with the qualifications required by the Science and Art Department.

The staff of the intermediate school was predominantly female, due to the reorganisation; a situation which the Board proposed to change when new appointments became necessary. (3)

- 
1. S.B.M.F. Vol. N, P. 299.
  2. IBID.
  3. S.B.M. Vol. N. P. 299.

It was also resolved that new appointments to the intermediate and junior scales should be paid the same salary as teachers in other Board schools.

The accommodation for physics and manual instruction was proving inadequate by 1899. Permission to use rooms in another building nearby was refused by the Science and Art Department, therefore the Board resolved, in February, to provide a new block at the science school.<sup>(1)</sup> The plan was to have a manual instruction room on the ground floor with chemistry and physics laboratories above. Education Department approval to the scheme was obtained in July and tender of £2,977. 11s 3d accepted in November.<sup>(2)</sup> The erection of the new block, (was delayed by a bricklayers strike but when) completed in 1902, it provided excellent accommodation for the teaching of practical science.

In 1900 the existence of the Higher Grade schools was threatened by the Higher Elementary Schools Minute of 6th April, 1900, and by the Cockerton judgement. The main provisions of the minute were:

"( ) The school had to give an approved four year course."

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.O.P.378.  
2. S.B.M. Vol.P.P.122.

- "(2) Pupils had to be certified by an H.M.I. as likely to profit by instruction before being admitted to a higher elementary school; and their fitness to continue in it, or to be promoted to a higher class had to be similarly certified each year.
- (3) Attendances of pupils over 15 would not be recognised.
- (4) Pupils were not to remain in a higher elementary school beyond the close of the school year in which they reached 15 years of age.
- (5) Grants were to be on a higher or lower scale according to the inspector's report being favourable or unfavourable. They were also graded steeply so that pupils in the fourth year would attract a much higher grant.
- (6) Rules were also included to prevent these higher elementary schools receiving grants from other sources, or teachers engaging in other duties (such as teaching "Science" or "Art" classes) during school hours".<sup>(1)</sup>

In June 1900, the School Board informed the Board of Education that it was considering converting the Whitehall Road

---

1. E. Eaglesham, "School Board to Local Authority" Routledge & Kegan Paul P.50.

Higher Grade school into a Higher Elementary school.<sup>(1)</sup> The Board of Education replied that an application would be favourably received<sup>(2)</sup>, but no further action was taken.

The next threat to the Higher Grade schools occurred in November 1900, when the Board of Education pointed out<sup>(3)</sup> that a High Court action (*Regina v Cockerton*) was pending over the legality of certain classes held in Higher Grade schools and evening schools. No new classes would be authorised, although the Board of Education did not propose to withdraw grants, at that stage, from schools and classes previously grant aided.

The future of the Higher Grade schools, therefore, was placed in jeopardy, but the School Board did not accept the situation quietly. On 29th November 1900, <sup>(4)</sup> it resolved that a deputation should make representations to local M.P's about the Board of Education's action relative to Higher Grade schools.

The High Court judgement upheld *Cockerton* and in March 1901 the Board of Education informed the School Board that unless the judgement was reversed on appeal it would be unable to continue grants to schools of Science & Art or to Science and Art classes, maintained illegally out of the School Fund.<sup>(5)</sup>

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.P. P.348. 2. IBID. 3. IBID P.457.  
4. S.B.M. Vol.P. P.490. 5. IBID P.588.

The Board of Education then said that the 'status quo' would be temporarily maintained and reminded the School Board that Schools of Science could be converted in Higher Elementary Schools under the Minute of April 1900.

The School Board realised that the above Minute would severely restrict the work of the Higher Grade schools, while the age limit specified would prevent a substantial number of pupils from continuing their education. Therefore, the Board of Education was informed that the conversion of:

"....our Higher Grade school (Durham Road) into a Higher Elementary school would be little short of a public calamity for this town as, with the exception of one school of about 100 pupils,<sup>(1)</sup> it is the only school in this town of 110,000 inhabitants where those who desire can remain at school beyond the age of 15."<sup>(2)</sup>

In Gateshead about 280 pupils<sup>(3)</sup> would have been deprived of education, and the Chairman of the School Board felt that Sir John Gorst's statement, that all such pupils would be better catered for in secondary schools, betrayed a limited knowledge of the North-East.<sup>(4)</sup> If secondary schools existed there was much to be said for his statement, but in Gateshead there were no such schools.

---

1. Gateshead High School opened 1876 in Prospect Terrace Bensham and transferred 1880 to premises on Windmill Hills. Amalgamated with the Newcastle Branch in 1907 to form the Central Newcastle High School. S. Middlebrook Newcastle upon Tyne its Growth & Achievement Pages 294-295.

2. S.B.M. Vol.P.P.588. 3. Ncle.Daily Leader 11.7.01.

4. As note 1.

The School Board also informed the Board of Education that they wished to adapt,

"....their curriculum to local circumstances and especially render it more suitable to the requirements of girls but it appears....that these schools (Higher Elementary) are to be tied down to the curriculum of the organised science schools."(1)

In short, the School Board saw no advantage in converting the Higher Grade school into a higher elementary school, unless the age restriction was removed and some freedom allowed in the choice of curriculum.

In May 1901, the Clerk joined a deputation from the Association of School Boards to the Duke of Devonshire relative to the Higher Grade and Evening Continuation schools.(2) In July 1901, a further attempt was made to encourage local M.P's to secure the withdrawal of the Code and the Education Bill, (which became the 1901 Education Act).(3)

The Education Act 1901 provided that a school board, which had illegally maintained schools or classes out of the school fund during the year ending 31st July 1901, had to obtain the sanction of its local council for their continuance during the session 1901-02.(4)

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.P. P.588. 2. S.B.M. Vol.Q. P.79. 3. IBID P114.  
4. The Education Act 1901 (Renewal) Act, 1902 secured their continuance for final session 1902-03.

Consequently the School Board applied to the Town Council for permission to continue the Higher Grade schools. Permission was granted in September 1901,<sup>(1)</sup> and renewed in September 1902.<sup>(2)</sup>

The importance of the Higher Grade schools in Gateshead cannot be overestimated. During their short life they provided an increasing proportion of the pupil-teachers; they provided the only source of "advanced" education for the able children from elementary schools and were the direct forerunners of secondary education in the town.

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.Q.P.152.

2. IBID P.542.

## CHAPTER VIII

### Evening Schools.

#### Voluntary Evening Schools Pre-1870

Evening schools, or "Night Schools" as they were popularly known, were certainly held in Gateshead before 1870. Mention has already been made (Page 14) of the evening school at the Friar's Goose school in 1839. The next important evidence is of an evening school which was held at the National school in Ellison Terrace from 1855, although an earlier date is probable. The National School's report for 1855<sup>(1)</sup> states:

"The theory that every child ought to be in school from the age of 5 to 15 is so utterly extravagant and impracticable, that no man who knows anything of the real conditions of our mechanics and artisans, who are burdened with large families, can in the majority of cases regard it possible. The most feasible means of dealing with the difficulties of the question and meeting these cases, appears to be to establish Evening Schools during the six winter months, from October to March, in connection with our National Schools."

The views expressed above show how far the popular conception of the place of education, one hundred years ago, differed from the views held today. It also demonstrates the climate of opinion that made evening schools for elementary, not further or higher education, necessary at the time it was written and for many years after the introduction of first voluntary (and then compulsory) full time elementary education.

---

1. Appendix to Gateshead Schools and Education Week 1928.

The evening schools in the National School were intended for "adult men and boys past 14 years of age"<sup>(1)</sup> and were therefore available to those in full-time employment. The classes were held from 7 - 9 p.m. during the six winter months, and pupils paid a fee of 1½d per week. Being a church foundation, the evening session began with a prayer and ended with a passage of scripture, the Lord's Prayer and the doxology. The remainder of the time was devoted to the 3 R's. After an initial subscription, for a supply of books, the school was self supporting from the fees collected. The teachers were clerics or volunteers from the Church of England Young Men's Society. In 1855 the average attendance was 50-60.

There is some evidence of other evening classes, in Voluntary schools before 1870, in the lists of schools under Government inspection and in receipt of Parliamentary Grant published in the annual Committee of Council on Education Reports. From such sources, it has been discovered that evening classes were held in St. Joseph's Roman Catholic School, from its inception in 1867, and at St. James' Chapel School. The classes at St. Joseph's and at the National School continued after 1870.

#### Evening Classes under the School Board

From the Board's minutes, it would appear that the initiative for the commencement of evening schools came, not from

---

1. Appendix to Gateshead Schools & Education Week 1928,

Evening Classes under the School Board (contd)

the Board itself, but from R.A. Bowler Esq., headmaster of Prior Street school. On 14 October 1874, it is recorded that:

"Mr. Bowler be allowed the use of Boys School (Prior Street) for a night school and that the gas consumed during the meeting be measured and charged for. He be allowed the use of desks, inkwells etc." (1)

The key word is "allowed" which implies that Mr. Bowler had sought the Board's permission to hold the school, and was not being requested to do so. A month later it was reported as "doing well" with 115 in attendance.(2)

The next mention of an evening school was not the result of the Board's initiative. Mr. Gibson, the summoning officer, reported on 11 November 1874 that he had received several enquiries as to whether a night school would be opened for girls during the winter.(3) He said that he had spoken to Miss Mitchell, headmistress of Prior Street Girls School, who had intimated her willingness to organise one, if the Board desired her to do so. The Board decided to offer Miss Mitchell the use of Prior Street school, as a Night School, and in case she declined, Miss Jobson(4) or Miss Gibson(5) was to be asked to take charge.

Early in 1875, the Board consented to the opening of .

1. S.B.M. Vol.B, P.112.
2. IBID, P.115.
3. IBID.
4. Mistress of Prior St. Infants' School.
5. Asst. Mistress Prior St. Girls' School.

a night school in Procktor's Buildings,<sup>(1)</sup> and in February the Managers of High Level Road school were empowered to spend up to £10 on conducting a night school.<sup>(2)</sup>

The school year, which began in September 1875, saw a continuation of the night schools. Once again Mr. Bowler was given permission to open one on the same terms as the previous year. Mr. Elliott, the headmaster, was granted permission to open one in Alexandra Road School,<sup>(3)</sup> and in October Miss Varty<sup>(4)</sup> was allowed to open a Night school at Prior Street on the usual terms. In the same month Mr. Yeaman was given permission to hold a night school at Pipewellgate; the Board paying him £1 per week and taking all the fees and grants.<sup>(5)</sup>

The Board's decision to pay Mr. Yeaman a fixed salary marks a change in policy. Hitherto, the person in charge had taken all the fees and grants as payment, paying the Board for the fuel and light. Obviously the Board had realised that the masters derived a good income from this arrangement and had resolved to increase its own resources by changing the system.

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.B, P.152.
  2. IBID, P.159.
  3. IBID, P.206.
  4. Assistant Mistress, Prior Street Girls.
  5. S.B.M. Vol.B, P.219.

The average attendance and grants from the Education Department for 1876 were as follows:(1)

School	Av.Attendance	Grant
Alexandra Rd.	52	£28. 4. 6.
Pipewellgate	17	£ 4.18. 0.
Prior Street	68	£29. 2. 0.

Night schools continued to grow in popularity, and in September 1878 the Board sanctioned them in Prior Street, Sheriff Hill, Alexandra Road and Redheugh schools.(2) All the above evening schools were really what might be termed, in the words of the Evening Schools Committee, "Day Continuation Schools." In other words they continued the elementary work of the day schools in the evenings for those students, who had not been to a day school, or who had failed to complete the standards, because they had left school early.

Such classes, providing purely elementary education, continued to be a feature of the evening school system, but they diminished in importance(3) as more and more pupils received a thorough elementary grounding in the day schools. Indeed, from 1885 onwards they were replaced by a new type of class.

---

1. C of C on Ed., 1876, P.

2. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.341.

3. Nationally, average attendance at Evening Schools declined in the period 1870-85, from 83,457 in 1870-71 to 24,000 in 1884-85.

Smith: A History of English Elementary Education 1760-1902, P.301-302.

Once again the initiative did not come from the Board. In July, the Board received a deputation of twenty-nine working men headed by Professor Garnett<sup>(1)</sup> L.L.D. of the College of Physical Science.<sup>(2)</sup> The deputation requested "recreative evening classes for children of the working class, to cover the gap between leaving school and being old enough to attend Science and Art Classes, so that they do not forget what they learn at school."<sup>(3)</sup> These classes were the forerunner of the evening continuation schools; that is they continued, to a higher standard, the foundations laid in the ordinary day school.

The deputation wanted working men on the management committees; it asked for the subjects to be recreative and practical and for the methods of teaching to be as practical and interesting as possible and to include musical drill, singing, experimental science, drawing, modelling, carving, the elements of design, practical cookery, domestic economy and sewing. It was suggested that for subjects not provided under the Code, Voluntary teachers should be secured. Finally, it was suggested that occasional entertainments should be held, in the school buildings, under the control of the managers for the parents and friends of the children attending.<sup>(4)</sup>

- 
1. Secretary of the Technical Education Board at the time of the Cockerton Crisis. E. Eaglesham, 'School Board to Local Authority', Routledge & Kegan Paul, P.113.
  2. The forerunner of Armstrong College, subsequently King's College, now Newcastle University.
  3. S.B.M. Vol.F, P.372 & 373.
  4. Similar classes also opened in 1885 in London by Recreative Evening Schools Association - Eaglesham, P.64. But in Gateshead the classes from the outset came under S.B. control and were financed by the Board.

The question of the recreative classes was referred to the School Management Committee which reported on the 14 October. The report<sup>(1)</sup> was favourable; it said that classes should be held and everything done to make them attractive and popular by allying to instruction, classes of a recreative nature, which should be amply illustrated by diagrams or practical demonstrations. It proposed that as soon as possible evening schools for boys should be started at Askew Road, Sunderland Road, schools and one for girls at Durham Road school.<sup>(2)</sup>

The classes were to be held from 7-9 p.m. on Mondays, Tuesdays and Thursdays and the fee was to be 3d per week; in November it was reduced to 2d. The head teacher of each school was to be paid 3/- for each actual week of service, and voluntary teachers were to be secured for the recreative classes. Reading books, slates etc. were to be provided by the Board, but pupils had to provide their own exercise and copying books. Each class was to be examined by an inspector. Finally, the committee recommended the following draft timetable:

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.F, P.422 et seq.
  2. IBID, P.422-423.

(1)

MONDAY	TUESDAY	THURSDAY
7-7.30 Illustrated Reading	7-7.45 Arithmetic	7 - 8 Drawing & Modelling
7.30-8 Letter Writing & Composition.	7.45-8.15 Singing	
8-8.15 Musical Drill	8.15-9 Grammar	8 - 9 Science illustrated by experiments and magic lantern
8.15-9 Geography		

It will be noted that all the subjects requested by the July deputation were not included in the timetable. However, the School Management Committee had managed to produce a varied and, by the standards of the time, an interesting curriculum. The classes opened on the 2nd November.(2)

Working men managers were appointed to the boys' schools and suitable ladies supervised the girls' school.(3) The average attendance for the session was 63 at Durham Road, 74 at Sunderland Road and 83 at Askew Road. All three departments were inspected by an H.M.I., who reported that the results were fairly satisfactory.(4) The work of the voluntary teachers during the first session was commended and it was pointed out

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.F, P.424.

2. IBID, P.439.

3. IBID, P.440.

4. S.B.M. Vol.G, P.51-53.

that the continued help of the managers was required for the success of the scheme. In addition to the 3 R's and drawing at the boys' schools, some took lessons in carving and a smaller number in clay modelling - good results being obtained in the face of difficulties.(1)

The success of the venture is obvious from its continuance and expansion in subsequent sessions. The second session which began on 27 September 1886 marks an increase in the number of centres to five; Sunderland Road, Askew Road and Oakwellgate for boys; Durham Road and Redheugh for girls.(2) The head teachers' salaries were increased and paid on a per capita basis, 13/- per week for up to 70 pupils; 15/- per week for over 70 pupils and 20/- per week for over 100 pupils; Assistant teachers were paid 9/- per week.(3) The ages of the pupils varied from 13 - 18, although the majority were between 13 and 16 and were bridging the gap between full-time education and possible attendance at Science and Art Classes. In addition to the ordinary subjects of the Code, the boys had experimental lessons in Science, magic lantern demonstrations, modelling, drawing, stencilling and carving.(4) Early in 1887 it was stated that specimens of their work would be exhibited in the Jubilee Exhibition at Newcastle. Meanwhile, the girls

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.G, P.51-53.

2. IBID, P.128.

3. IBID.

4. Advertisement in S.B.M. Vol.G, P.127-128.

studied drawing, cookery and needlework. In 1886 the fees did not exceed 3d per week, except for cookery, for which an extra fee of 2d was charged; if cookery only was taken then the fee was 4d.(1)

Expansion continued; in 1887 the numbers of centres was increased to six, Oakwellgate being used for girls as well as boys.(2) By 1888, the number had increased to eight, Victoria Road and Sheriff Hill being used as additional centres for boys.(3) Nine centres were used in 1889; another centre for girls being opened at Prior Street.(4)

By 1888 the staffing of the evening schools had evolved from the stage, where a head teacher was appointed and then recruited his own staff, to the stage where a head teacher and an assistant were appointed to all the centres except Oakwellgate (boys), Oakwellgate (girls), and Sheriff Hill. In these schools only a head teacher was appointed, presumably because of the small numbers attending.

In 1889, an amendment was made to the fees. 3d per week was still charged, but, at the end of the session, a sum equal to 1d per week was returned to each scholar who qualified and presented himself for the annual examination.( 5)

1. S.B.M. Vol.G, P.127-128.
2. IBID, P.375.
3. S.B.M. Vol.H, P.103.
4. IBID, P.366.
5. IBID.

The Fifth Triennial Report of the Board, in November 1888, said that assuming 14,000 pupils were in attendance at elementary schools, and that the average school life of each scholar was eight years (5 - 13), it followed that approximately 1,750 pupils left day schools in Gateshead yearly, although the actual number was probably nearer 2,000. Only about 300 pupils were attending the evening schools established by the Board; a number, which although it showed "no marked success, has yet resulted in progress being made" as the "Night school is gradually becoming the natural complement of the day school." The report went on to say that the introduction of recreative subjects had shown the existence of much latent ability and the Board hoped that the Education Code for evening schools would be largely recast and that grants, in aid of well organised night schools, would be given without insisting upon individual examination.

For some time it had been obvious, to those concerned with the management of and instruction in evening schools, that the Code of Regulations was not well suited to the circumstances and needs of such schools, and from 1888 onwards the Board's interest in obtaining some amendment to the Code may be noticed.

---

In the above-mentioned report, the Board made two quotations from the Cross Commission to support its point of view.

"The weight of evidence is strongly in favour of a special curriculum for evening schools ..... It is made a complaint against the provisions of the Code, that an evening scholar is expected, in the short school session to master the same standard in the 3 R's, which is required of a day scholar attending school all the year. If, therefore, the standards are to be used in these schools, it is contended that they should be special standards, adapted to the circumstances and possibilities of the case."

"We attach the highest importance to the development and training of the physical powers of the youth of both sexes and we, therefore, think that in the reorganisation of evening and continuation schools, moral and physical training should have as prominent a place as ordinary instruction and intellectual training." (1)

The report concluded by saying that, although legislation was promised, which would increase the powers of school boards relative to evening work, considerable latitude should be allowed to local authorities to meet the varying needs of different localities.

To support this policy, in February 1890 the Chairman, the Vice Chairman and the Clerk went as members of a joint deputation, sponsored by the Leeds School Board, which waited

---

1. 5th T.R. 1888, P.11.

upon the Vice President of the Committee of Council on Education, to urge the necessity of making such changes in the Code as would enable the evening schools to be developed.(1)

The session 1889-90 showed that the recreative classes were continuing to increase steadily:

(2)

	Av.Attendance	No. Examined	Grant
1888-89	281	200	£281
1889-90	325	260	£325

The Chairman commented that these figures did not represent what might be done and what ought to be done in a town like Gateshead.(3)

Up to 1890 the classes had been arranged, in the September, by the Evening Schools sub-committee, but, in that year, the sub committee began planning the coming session in June. It was proposed to establish the same classes as in the previous year, and in addition to the ordinary subjects, it was proposed to extend the teaching of cooking and possibly dress-making.(4)

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.H, P.493.  
 2. News Cutting S.B.M. Vol.J, P.132.  
 3. S.B.M. Vol.J, P.162-165.  
 4. IBID.

In October 1890 the sub committee reported that the schools had been re-opened. Prior to their resumption, however, a special meeting of evening school teachers<sup>(1)</sup> had been held, at which the sub committee had impressed upon the teachers the necessity of making the classes interesting and of giving the pupils instruction in the subjects they wanted. To this end the sub-committee had suggested that teachers, in charge of the various centres, should hold a meeting of old students and invite them to suggest suitable subjects for the curriculum. As a result, it was ascertained that, although a number wanted the 3 R's, a large number wanted wood-carving, French, cookery, and letter writing, while a considerable number of the older girls wanted various kind of needlework and dressmaking. It was promised that, as far as possible, the wishes of the scholars would be carried out.

One subject, dressmaking, posed a problem as the ordinary teachers were competent only for plain cutting out, not for dressmaking. Two courses were open, a special teacher could be employed or the ordinary teachers could be trained. The latter course was decided upon and consequently a Mme.Lofvall, a fully qualified teacher, was engaged to give a series of demonstration lessons to the teachers. Her fee was £4 for the

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.J, P.162-165.

session. The classes were held on Saturday afternoons in the Higher Grade School. Other teachers, apart from those employed in the evening schools, were invited to attend; many availed themselves of the opportunity.(1)

The sub-committee also asked for two magic lanterns and a supply of reading books specially suited to evening schools to be purchased.(2)

By providing subjects, other than elementary subjects, in the recreative evening classes, the Board had laid the foundation of what became known officially after 1893 as evening continuation schools. In 1888, however, further classes were established at the Higher Grade School by the headmaster for which he obtained Board approval. These classes included an evening continuation school of which no details were given and special classes in shorthand, Latin and French.(3) The fee for the special classes was to be 10/- for the session and the teachers were to be paid the fees less 10%. The fact that the teachers were so paid, whereas the teachers of the science classes received a share of the grant, implies that the special classes earned no grant. This supposition is borne out in the Fifth Triennial Report which states that special classes, in

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.J, P.162-164.
  2. IBID, P.165.
  3. S.B.M. Vol.H, P.94-95.

Latin, Shorthand and French, in addition to those recognised by the South Kensington Authorities, had been started at the Higher Grade School and numerous pupils were in attendance.

These classes anticipated the Technical Instruction Act 1889 which said that instruction in modern languages, shorthand and kindred subjects came under the heading of Technical Instruction.

The classes continued in 1889, and, in 1890<sup>(1)</sup> it was proposed to hold classes in French, German, Shorthand, Book-keeping, business correspondence, manual instruction and "any other subject which experience may suggest". To support the classes the Board proposed to apply for a grant of, say, £100 from the excise money collected by the Town Council.<sup>(2)</sup> In October 1890 the evening schools sub-committee reminded the Board that no grants for these subjects would be received from the Science and Art Department unless the local authority aided their development under the Technical Instruction Act.<sup>(3)</sup> In default of help from the council, it said, the cost would have to be defrayed by fees and any deficiency made up from the general fund of the Board.<sup>(4)</sup> The last suggestion was illegal under the terms of the 1870 Act.

---

1. S.B.M. Vol J. P94.

2. IBID.

3. IBID P166.

4. IBID.

Obviously the efforts to provide a more attractive curriculum succeeded as in May 1891<sup>(1)</sup> it was reported that enrolments for the preceding session had totalled 1131 with 599 in average attendance. £124. 11. 11d was paid in fees of which £27 10. 0d was returned to those students qualified by attendance for a rebate. This figure compares with £12. 11. 2d which had been returned after the 1889-90 session and therefore marks a spectacular increase in average attendance. For the 1890-91 session expenditure was given as follows:

Salaries	£361. 6. 8.
Books etc	£ 32.19. 5.
Cleaning	<u>£ 19. 0. 0.</u>
Total:	<u>£413. 6. 1.</u>

The sub-committee pointed out that the net cost, to the school fund after the receipt of fees and government grants,<sup>(2)</sup> had been £120. It commented that if the Town Council had complied with the Board's request for a grant, under the Technical Instruction Act 1889, then the amount, which would have been received from the Science & Art Department, would have been almost sufficient to prevent the classes being any charge to the town.<sup>(3)</sup>

---

1. S.B.M. Vol. J. P. 337-339.  
 2. From Education Department.  
 3. S.B.M. Vol. J. P. 338.

At this point it is pertinent to consider the effect of the 1889 Act on evening schools in Gateshead, and the relationships between the Board and the Town Council over its implementation. The Technical Instruction Act 1889 empowered the Local Authority (in Gateshead the Town Council) to disburse the excise duty or "whisky money", which it collected, for the purposes of technical instruction. Technical instruction was held by the Act to include instruction in modern languages, shorthand and kindred subjects as well as subjects of an obviously technical nature. The Science and Art Department, at the same time, offered a grant, for the development of technical instruction, which was virtually a promise to pay a sum, equal or nearly equal to any sum raised locally.

As the Gateshead Town Council was expected to collect about £1,200, which might be used for educational purposes, the Board felt that a portion of the money, say, £100, might be used to assist the development of night schools and Science and Art work. If this was done then the night schools and the Science and Art Classes would be able to avail themselves of the generous grant offered by the Science and Art Department.

The Board's application for assistance was turned down, as the Town Council determined to use the excise money to

---

extend its own Art School and Public Library, and, as the Board was given to understand, to establish there new classes which would duplicate those provided by the Board and be in direct competition with them. With reference to the Art School the Chairman was reported as saying:

"No one would object to its extension but to commence other classes there, similar to those the Board were carrying on would certainly seem to be a waste of power and to establish rival institutions where no rivalry should exist."

"Was it too much to hope that the Council might be induced to reconsider this, and to devote, at any rate, a portion of that money towards the development of existing agencies rather than the establishment of new ones"?

(1)

In 1890-91 the Council did not reconsider its decision, hence the already mentioned comment of the evening schools sub-committee about the Board's inability to profit from the Science and Art Department's grant.

By permitting the local authority to hold the purse strings, the Technical Instruction Act enables the local authority, if it so wished, to withhold financial assistance from its local school board or school boards and to institute its own system of technical education, as a rival to that provided by the school board. It was, therefore, a significant step in the breakdown

---

of school board authority and marked the first point at which the local authorities began to have some real influence in the field of education.

From 1892 onwards, the Council did give a grant towards Technical Instruction under the School Board:

(1)

YEAR	AMOUNT
1892 -	£300
1893 -	£300
1894 -	£200
1895 -	£100
1896 -	£100
1897 -	£100
1898 -	£100
1899 -	£100
1900 -	£100
1901 -	£100
1902 -	£100

The Council's decision to support the Board's evening school work, although on a diminishing scale, allowed the Board to obtain the vital Science and Art Department grants, which put the evening classes on a firmer financial basis than they had formerly enjoyed.

The 1893 Code which provided new conditions resulted in a revision and expansion of the Evening Continuation Schools. The

---

1. Figures 1892-1900 from Triennial Reports, for 1901 from Ncle. Daily Leader 5.9.01 and for 1902 from S.B.M. Vol.Q. P.576.

Code abolished individual examination, removed all age restrictions for those legally exempt from attending day schools and allowed considerable freedom to evening school managers in the choice of instruction. Grants were placed on a new basis.

The grant was to be separately assessed for each subject:

- (a) Fixed grants of 1/- were paid for every 12 hours instruction.
- (b) A variable of 1/6th or 1/- for every 12 hours instruction was paid in certain subjects. Grant under this heading was to be decided by the Department after studying the H.M.I's report. (1)

One important condition was that the school had to be reported efficient by the Inspector, and it would not be so reported unless the Inspector was satisfied that the order was good, that the teaching was systematic and intelligent, and that the scholars were making genuine progress in the subjects taught. (2)

The Board commented that the Code would considerably modify the procedure of the night schools, for, although it afforded liberty for recreative subjects, it necessitated thorough teaching to earn the variable grant and would make accurate registration very important. (3)

- 
- 1. S.B.M. Vol.L.P.5.
  - 2. IBID.
  - 3, IBID.

The initial reaction to the new Code was not good.

The report on the development of the evening continuation schools made in 1894 stated:

"The Evening School Code was expected to give an impetus to evening classes, but it does not appear to have done so to any large extent. In fact, the rigidity of the registration rules, and hard and fast timetables, appear rather to have the effect of discouraging the young students and teachers." (1)

The Board did acknowledge, however, that the evening schools were doing "better work than ever" and that, although the numbers attending were not large, "those who attend receive sound and methodical instruction."

From 1894 onwards, however, the work of the evening continuation schools went from strength to strength. Unfortunately, no evidence of the subjects taught is available, but the number of centres, enrolments, average attendance and Government grant all increased as the decade progressed.

In 1896 Evening Continuation Schools were opened in 10 centres.<sup>(2)</sup> and although this was the same number as in 1893 it marks an increase because the school at South Street was mixed (it had previously been organised as separate centres for

1. 7 T.R. 1894, P.14.
2. S.B.M. Vol.H, P.7.

boys and girls) and a new boys' centre at Brighton Avenue was added to the list. In 1897 the number was 12; 7 being mixed. Enrolments shot up from 500 in 1894,<sup>(1)</sup> to 1,300 in 1896<sup>(2)</sup> and reached 1,441 for the session 1897-98.<sup>(3)</sup>

The average attendance and the Government grant also increased, as the following table shows:

	AVERAGE ATTENDANCE			GOVERNMENT GRANT		
	1895-96	1896-97	1897-98	1895-96	1896-97	1897-98
(4) Alexandra Road	86	52	32	£ 75 5 0	£ 42 7 6	£ 21.17 6
Askew Road	121	170	107	99 12 0	142 12 6	83 12 6
Brighton Avenue	-	59	111	-	55 11 0	97 2 6
South Street	110	165	205	84.12. 6	139. 7. 0	171. 5.0
Oakwellgate	29	46	47	14.15. 6	32.19. 6	28. 8 0
Redheugh	41	56	30	23.13. 0	49. 0. 0	18.14.0
Sheriff Hill	22	39	41	14.11. 6	24.12. 6	26.11.6
Sunderland Rd.	94	56	84	58. 5. 0	33. 9. 0	54. 9.0
Victoria	-	45	42	-	29.17. 0	27. 1.6
Low Fell	-	-	77	-	-	46. 1.6
Prior Street	-	-	30	-	-	19. 1.6
Totals	503	688	806	£370.14. 6	£549.16. 0	£594. 4.6

Various schemes were introduced by the Board to stimulate attendance at the evening continuation schools. From 1893, 50 free places at Science and Art Classes were awarded annually to pupils in the evening continuation schools who attended regularly, were diligent and did successful work.<sup>(5)</sup> In 1897 prizes were awarded to the pupils for 85% attendance and satisfactory progress,<sup>(6)</sup>

- 
1. 7 T.R. 1894, P.15.
  2. S.B.M. Vol.N, P.45.
  3. IBID, P.382.
  4. Compiled from S.B.M. Vol.N, P.237; Vol.0, P.99.
  5. S.B.M. Vol.L, P.7.
  6. S.B.M. Vol.N, P.160.

and in 1898 half fees were returned to pupils making 75% attendance.(1)

During the 1890's a small number of pupils, still at day school, enrolled in the night schools to obtain instruction in shorthand, book-keeping and similar subjects.(2) In 1900, however, the Board of Education stopped the arrangement "to the detriment of individual scholars and the School Board."(3)

The final years of the Board's responsibility were marked by a serious crisis which threatened to stop the work of the evening classes, and which is fully discussed on Pages 162 - 166.

#### Science and Art Classes

Classes under the auspices of the Science and Art Department, South Kensington were probably held in Gateshead prior to 1870, but the first mention of the Board's dealings with the South Kensington authorities occurs in 1872 when on 11 September, they granted permission for the Board to manage science classes in Gateshead.(4) The Vice Chairman, the Rev. Henry Riley and Mr. G.T. France were duly appointed as a committee to make the necessary arrangements for placing the classes under the management of the Board.

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.0. P.174.
  2. 9th T.R. 1900, P.21-22.
  3. IBID.
  4. S.B.M. Vol.A, P.202

No evidence of the classes themselves is forthcoming from the minutes in 1872 & 1873; but it is recorded that in September 1873 Mr. Gibson, the Summoning Officer, was nominated as corresponding secretary at a salary of £2 p.a. In 1874 occurs the first direct evidence of Science & Art Classes, under board management, when they were sanctioned in Prior Street on two nights per week, two hours each night at a rental of £6 for the session.(1)

Evidence remains scanty during the 1870's. In 1876 Mr. Paxton and Mr. Onions were appointed teachers of the science classes.(2) In January 1877 there was some discussion about the appointment of a local secretary for the classes and in August the chairman was authorised to sign "the usual forms" for the Science & Art Classes held at the Public Rooms, Low Fell and the National School, Barn's Close.(3) In October 1878, Mr. William Templeton, who had previously conducted a science class at Low Fell, was given permission to hold it in Alexandra Road School.

Meanwhile, in September 1878, the Board had received an application, from the manager of the Railway Reading Room(4) Drawing Class, requesting that it may be affiliated to the

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.B, P.113.
  2. S.B.M. Vol.B, P.355.
  3. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.62.
  4. Classes were still held here in 1900. N'cle Leader 1/11/1900.

Science and Art Classes under the Board, that a Mr. Fletcher and a Mr. Hepper be added to the Committee (as regards this class) and that their own secretary should remain as correspondent.<sup>(1)</sup> What is interesting is that on the evidence of this class there may well have been other classes, at the Mechanics Institute for example, though no evidence is available.

The final evidence of the Science and Art classes in the 1870's is a list of the enrolments from 1875 onwards.<sup>(2)</sup>

Year	Enrolments
1875	73
1876	71
1877	115
1878	121
1879	153

Although the table gives no idea of the number of classes held, it does indicate a rising demand for these advanced classes.

There is more evidence of the Science classes in the 1880's. In 1883, four science classes are recorded. Three were held by teachers, but the fourth, at Sunderland Road was held by Clarke Chapman & Co., presumably for apprentices.<sup>(3)</sup>

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol:C, P:340.
  2. 2nd T.R. 1879, P.16.
  3. S.B.M. Vol:E, P:390.

In 1886, the Board was again reconstituted as a science committee, the Clerk acting as secretary. Rooms were let on "the usual terms" to:(1)

Mr. Templeton - Alexandra Road School.

Mr. Onions - Higher Grade School  
Sunderland Road School.  
Durham Road School.

Mr. Bain - Low Fell.

The same teachers were re-appointed in 1887(2) and 1888(3) with the exception that Mr. Onions dropped his class at Sunderland Road.

Classes therefore were carried on at the Higher Grade School from 1886, although an earlier date is possible. In 1888, Mr. Wright wrote to the Board that, subject to their approval, he had arranged for the following science classes at the Higher Grade School:(4)

Plane and Solid Geometry	Mr. Paxton
Machine Drawing	Mr. Onions
Building Construction	Mr. Paxton
Mathematics	Mr. Scott
Applied Mechanics	Mr. Paxton
Magnetism	Mr. Gibbons
Chemistry	Mr. Wright
Steam	Mr. Paxton

The fees were to be 5/- for 2 or more subjects

Mr. Wright went on to say:

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.G, P.127.
2. IBID; P.350.
3. S.B.M. Vol.H, P.79.
4. Letter, S.B.M. Vol.H, P.94-95.

"as a basis the teachers of science have agreed to give up the fees, provided the Board advertises and provides rooms and apparatus, their payment to be the grants less some small deduction, say 5% or 10%. Messrs. Onions and Paxton claim that having carried the classes on so long the deduction should be nil." (1)

The Clerk's comments, on the above proposals, were that the science teachers should receive the grants less 10% except for the teacher of mathematics, who should have 10% added as his work was very hard and uncertain. On the Chairman's motion, however, the science teachers' remuneration was fixed at the grant less 5%(2)

Several points emerge from this communication of Mr. Wright's. First it would appear that hitherto the teachers of science and art classes had taken the fees and paid all the expenses incurred. Secondly it seems that the Higher Grade School, which was suited for the purpose, was being developed as the main centre for science classes in Gateshead. Finally, some indication of the range of subjects offered is given.

In 1891,(3) the science classes were reported as having gradually grown in numbers and efficiency. In the three years under review the number of papers worked had been:

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.H, P.94-95.
  2. IBID, P.96.
  3. 6th TR 1891, P.10.

1889 - 1,317<sup>(1)</sup>

1890 - 1,565

1891 - 1,454

No indication was given of the standard at which the papers had been set or of the successes obtained.

The Report also stated that in 1877 the number of students under instruction had barely exceeded 100, and the grant earned had been £104, whereas in 1891, under much more difficult conditions, the grant would be about £1,050.

Evidence of the Science & Art classes in the 1890's shows an expansion in the numbers enrolling:

Enrolments in S & A Classes <sup>(2)</sup>	
Year	Students
1896	365 *
1897	230 *
1898	300
1900	400
1901	322 *
1902	408

\* Figures are for H.G.S. centre only.  
Other figures relate to all S & A classes.

The curriculum of the Science & Art Classes also expanded during the 1890's.

1. 6th T.R. 1891, P.10.
2. Compiled from Minutes Vol.N P.45 & P.385; Vol.O P.233; 9th T.R. 1900, P.22; Vol.Q, P.202 & P.576.

In 1891, the following courses were offered:(1)

Elementary: Practical plane & Solid  
Geometry, naval architecture, theoretical  
mechanics, and sound light and heat.

Elementary & Advanced:Machine construction,  
mathematics, applied mechanics, magnetism  
and electricity, theoretical and practical  
inorganic chemistry, geology, botany,  
physiology, hygiene, steam, physiography,  
building construction, French, German, and  
shorthand.

Classes were also arranged in Latin, book-keeping,  
applied arithmetic for commercial men and mechanics, and pen-  
manship.

Obviously it was expected that some students would  
continue studying at University, because Latin was only included  
so that it would work in with other subjects for matriculation.(2)

By 1896 two centres for S & A classes are mentioned.  
The main one was in Whitehall Road Higher Grade school, but a  
subsidiary centre was in use at Redheugh school.(3)

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.J, P.389-90.
  2. IBID, P.390.
  3. S.B.M. Vol.N, P.6.

The list of classes for 1896-97 is worth recording because it contains the complex terms of payments to the teachers which had grown up.(1)

## HIGHER GRADE

Subject	Teacher	Evening	Hours	Terms
Freehand Model & Shading	E.G. Chatt Assistant: W.G.Nicholson	Mon. "	7-9 "	£10 + $\frac{1}{3}$ Grant up to £20 Assistant 4/6d per nig
Maths (Adv)	J. Backhouse	"	"	£10 + Grant
Geom.Drg. & Prac.Geom.	W. Walker "	" "	7-9.30 "	£15 + Grant above £10.
Botany	E. Simpson	Tues	7-8.30	£5 + Grant
Mach.Constr.	T. Onions	"	7-9.15	GRANT
German	H.Schunemann	"	7-9	£18
Latin	R. Wilson	"	7-8.30	Fees
Chem.(El.)	T.O. Storey	"	7-9.30	£10 + Grant above £10.
Chem. Adv.	"	Wed.	7-9.30	£10 + Grant above £10.
Mechs.applied	S.W. Whetton	"	7-8	£10 + Grant above £10.
Steem	"	"	8.15 - 9.15	£10 + Grant above £10
Bldg.Constr.	J.W. Hanson	"	7.30-9	£10 + $\frac{1}{2}$ Grant
Shorthand	F. Moody	"	7-9	Fees
Bookkeeping	"	Thurs.	7-9	Fees
Maths (El.)	W. Miller	"	7-8.30	£10 + Grant over £10
French	T.Harbottle	"	7-9	£5 + Fees
Mechs.Theory	J. McIntosh	"	7-8.30	£10 + Grant above £10
Magnetism El. & Elec. Adv.	J. Backhouse "	Fri. "	7-8.15 8.15 - 9.30	£15 + Grant above £10 £15 + Grant above £10
Arithmetic	T. Weddell	"	7-9)	6/- per night
Penmanship	"	"	" )	

Geometrical drawing, mathematics and machine construction were also taught at Redheugh centre. In 1897 another centre at Low Fell school was opened for drawing, machine construction and mathematics.(2)

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.N, P.5-6.
  2. IBID, P.354.

The 1898 list of classes was the same as the 1896 list except for the deletion of Latin and the addition of theoretical plumbing.(1)

The curriculum of the Science and Art evening classes contained commercial subjects which had been added piecemeal to the list of classes from 1888 onwards and which prior to 1891 had not been eligible for grants. After 1891 such classes were supported by the Technical Instruction grant and by Science & Art Department grants.

In 1899 the Board's Chairman deplored the lack of organisation in the Gateshead evening classes which meant that students often had to go to Newcastle to study.(2)

There were, as we have seen, a number of language and commercial classes under the Science and Art Department at Whitehall Road and a small commercial school at Alexandra Road; what was lacking was co-ordination. An evening school headmaster was therefore appointed to superintend student enrolment, and to advise intending students as to classes they should enter. He also had to consult with the science teachers, without interfering with them, about the arrangements for the science classes and to advise the Board on any developments needed.(3)

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.0, P.177.
  2. S.B.M. Vol.P, P.16.
  3. IBID.

At the same time, advanced commercial subjects - French, German, correspondence and book-keeping, mathematics, advanced shorthand and typewriting - were established at Whitehall Road, with a junior commercial school for the elementary stage of the subjects at Alexandra Road school.(1)

### The Evening School Crisis 1900-01

The work of the evening schools was threatened by the Cockerton Judgement and by the Evening Schools Minute of 1901.

The effect of the Cockerton Judgement became known in Gateshead in November 1900(2) when, in reply to application to hold certain new evening classes, the Board of Education pointed out that the maintenance of such classes out of the school fund was illegal and was the subject of a High Court Appeal. The Board of Education, not wishing to prejudice the appeal, refused to sanction the new classes, but said it would continue to pay grants to classes previously grant aided.

The School Board replied in strong terms:

"This intimation ..... has been received by the School Board with much surprise and especially from the fact that for nearly thirty years classes for the teaching of Science & Art, as set out in the Directory, have been provided by the Board without the least question as to their legality having been raised; nor has the

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol:P, P:16.
  2. IBID, P.457.

action of the School Board in making up any deficiency, after allowing for the grants and fees, ever been challenged during that period by the Auditor of the Local Government Board to whom the accounts have been regularly submitted ....." (1)

The Board's reply continued:

"Pending the result of the action which is to be raised in the High Court, the Board would respectfully submit that no alteration in the policy of the Department should be imposed upon School Boards, in the exercise of the freedom which they have hitherto engaged in commencing such classes as they believe to be advantageous to their district. The School Board would very respectfully suggest that it appears as if the Board of Education were taking sides with those persons who have raised this contention and are anticipating a decision which would be an entire reversal of the policy of the Department for so many years and consequently a severe reflection upon their officers and advisors." (2)

The next round in the struggle occurred in June 1901 when the School Management Committee reported that it had considered the question of evening continuation schools and science and art classes and had wondered, since the former classes could not be maintained for pupils above 16 if it was expedient to continue the classes or not.<sup>(3)</sup> The science and art classes, it said, could be maintained in one of two ways. If the Education Bill was passed, the Town Council might authorise the Board to continue the classes out of the school fund, or the Council might allow their continuance supported by a grant from the excise money.

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.P, P.458.
  2. IBID, P.459.
  3. S.B.M. Vol.Q, P.88.

The committee, being anxious to continue the classes, suggested that a deputation should meet the Town Council to secure the continuance of their work "without any infraction of the law as expressed in judgements recently given."(1)

The Deputation presented its case early in July. On 10th July an important Board meeting was held. The School Management Committee reported that the new Education Bill (became Education Act 1901) proposed that school boards should obtain authority from the Town Council to spend money on any school or class to which the school fund is not lawfully applicable.(2)

The Evening School Minute of 1901, which was considered, completely revolutionised all previous regulations. The system of grants was completely altered and would be largely reduced. There was also a serious age limitation; no attendance was to count for any scholar who at the commencement of the year had attained 15 years.(3) The Committee pointed out that if the age limit was insisted on, then it would be practically impossible to maintain any evening schools in Gateshead. As for Science and Art Classes, all reference to school boards had been struck out of the Directory, although in the previous year school boards had been recognised as managers of schools.(4)

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.Q, P.89.
  2. IBID, P.118.
  3. IBID.
  4. IBID.

A circular from the Association of School Boards was also considered. It criticised the sharp division between 15- and 15+ and the delay in issuing the Minute which made it impossible for new schemes to be submitted by August 1st. The Association recommended school boards to appeal for the return of the previous (Acland) Code.(1)

The Board resolved, at the meeting:

"That in view of the unsatisfactory Education Bill and Evening School Code recently introduced by the Government this Board regret that they cannot see their way to carry out the Evening Continuation Classes in their schools this session." (2)

When moving the resolution, Mr. Drummond said that by continuing the evening schools the Board was simply playing into the hands of the Government and aiding it in the scheme for crippling and destroying School Boards.(3)

A more optimistic note was struck at the August Meeting, when the Board resolved to commence the Night Classes on 23 September, subject to the Town Council agreeing to support them.(4) The Council was approached and on 5th September agreed to support those classes which had been held during the year ending 31 July 1901.(5)

- 
1. N'cle Daily Leader 11/7/01.
  2. S.B.M. Vol.Q, P.114.
  3. N'cle Daily Leader 11/7/01.
  4. S.B.M. Vol.Q, P.145.
  5. IBID, P.152.

So after much anxiety, the evening school work which had been carefully developed over nearly twenty years was allowed to continue for the penultimate session before the Board was superseded by the Local Education Authority. Permission was renewed in 1902 for the final session 1902-03.(1)

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.Q, P.542.

## CHAPTER IX

### Financial Difficulties

The Education Act of 1870 permitted a school board three main sources of income; school fees, the Government grant paid as a result of the annual inspection and examination and the revenue, required to make up any deficit in the school fund, which was raised through the local rates by a precept issued by the school board to the local authority. A school board was also empowered to borrow from the Public Works Loan Commissioners,<sup>(1)</sup> subject to the approval of the Education Department, to defray the cost of building and equipping school premises.

The Gateshead School Board employed all the above methods to obtain income and successfully contracted loans with the P.W.L.C. to finance its school building programme,<sup>(2)</sup> yet during the late 1870's, the 1880's and the early 1890's, the Gateshead Board, in common with boards in other poor, populous industrial areas, ran into severe financial difficulties which resulted in heavy charges being imposed on the rates.

Why did the School Board run into these difficulties?

One possible answer, extravagance or mismanagement by the Board,

---

1. Elementary Education Act 1870, Sec.57.

2. A loan was also obtained for the purchase of School Board Offices.

can be ruled out, with the possible exception of the Board's decision to build a Day Industrial School; a decision which is fully documented in Chapter VI. The real answer lies in the state of education in Gateshead in 1870 and in the fact that Gateshead was a poor industrial area with a large and rising population. These two facts meant that the Board had to provide an exceptionally large number of school places.

The first chapter has already noted, in detail, the educational provision in Gateshead in 1870. Suffice it to say that the First Board had to provide accommodation for 3,930 children out of 11,180 aged between 3 & 13, or about 33% of the child population of the Borough. In the decade 1871 - 1881, however, the population of Gateshead increased from 48,627 to 65,845 and by 1901 totalled 109,888. Virtually all the extra burden (1) of school provision fell on the School Board, which, by 1881, was providing school places for 70% of the child population of the town; the national average provision was for 25% of the children in a school district. By 1885, the figure had abated to 69% compared to a national figure of 34%; still a monstrous burden.(2)

- 
1. From 1877 onwards the School Board was progressively the major provider of school places in Gateshead, although nationally voluntary schools provided more places even in 1901. See Appendix No.8. The Newcastle School Board did not become the major provider of school places in the City until 1897. S. Middlebrook, Newcastle upon Tyne its Growth and Achievement P.287
  2. 4th T.R. 1885, P.19.

The second factor which aggravated the situation was the relative poverty of the Borough. The rateable value of Gateshead, £110,385 in 1870 when the rate was 4/1d in the £, was very low compared with its neighbours, because in Gateshead the rates of a great deal of tenement property were compounded by 50%(1) By 1879, the rateable value had increased to £194,000, but the rate was still 4/1d despite a relatively heavy education rate. Comparative figures show that in Gateshead the product of a 1d rate was £700 in 1870, whereas in Newcastle a 1d rate yielded £2,800(2) Another comparison with Sunderland is pertinent. In Sunderland the rates of tenement property were compounded by only 20% compared with 50% in Gateshead. Therefore, because of the difference in the method of rating and in the resulting rateable value of the town, a higher rate per £ was required in Gateshead to realise the same amount of revenue. For example, in Gateshead a block of tenement flats, whose rateable value was £100, would only pay on £50, whereas in Sunderland if the rateable value was the same, the tenant would pay on £80; therefore a 1/- rate in Gateshead would yield £2. 10. 0d., but in Sunderland the same rate would yield £4. 0.0. To state the point in another way, the same amount (£2. 10.0) could be raised in Sunderland with a 7½d rate compared with a 1/- rate in Gateshead.(3)

- 
1. Chairman's statement 5th Nov. 1879 - appended to 2nd T.R. 1879. By 1891 1d. Rate in G'hd = £800, in N'cle £3,400 - Daily Leader 18/11/91.
  2. IBID.
  3. 3rd T.R. 1882, P.15.

The small yield from the rates meant that a higher rate per £ had to be levied to realise a less or equivalent sum to that needed by Gateshead's neighbouring school boards or indeed to that needed by most other school boards in England & Wales. The result was that in 1882 the deficiency in the School Fund (to be met by the Rating Authority) was 1/- in the £ in Gateshead, compared with a national average of 5.1d in the £.(1) The greatest expenditure was incurred on the repayment of loans from the P.W.L.C., 5.5d in the £ being required to repay the Gateshead School Board's loans, while only 1.59d in the £ was the national average.(2)

Any charge of extravagance or mismanagement by the Board can be refuted by close examination of the Board's expenditure. With the possible exception of the Day Industrial School, all the schools were built as economically as possible to satisfy an existing need. The scales of equipment and staff were adequate but not lavish. Maximum benefit was derived from all sources of income, school fees, the sale of books and the Government grant, and finally the Finance Committee, the treasurer and the District Auditor kept a very close watch on all expenditure.

- 
1. Appendix No.11(b).
  2. IBID. In 1888 National average rate 7.2d of which 2.5d required for loan repayment. Gateshead rate 1/- of which 5d or 6d required for loan repayment. 5th T.R. 1888, P.21.

By far the largest item of expenditure was the school building programme, which necessitated the raising of heavy loans.<sup>(1)</sup> and which placed a heavy burden on the ratepayer. The schools, which had to be approved by the Education Department, were built as economically as possible as the following table shows.

(2)							
COST OF SCHOOLS UP TO NOV.1879							
School	Accm <sup>×</sup>	Cost of Site		Total		Cost per Child	
		£.	s. d	£.	s. d.	£.	s. d.
Prior Street	1,341	2,388.	0. 0	10,893.	0. 0	8.	2. 6
Alexandra Rd.	1,008	646.	0. 0	8,880.	0. 0	8.	16. 2
Sunderland Rd.	1,050	2,000.	0. 0	10,131.	0. 0	9.	12. 11
Redheugh	800	2,900.	0. 0	11,500.	0. 0	14.	7. 6
Sheriff Hill	450	400.	0. 0	5,432.	0. 0	12.	1. 5
Oakwell Gate	468	2,549.	0. 0	5,831.	0. 0	10.	5. 3
Grant Street	200	300.	0. 0	1,896.	0. 0	12.	9. 0
Windmill Hills	201	1,400.	0. 0	3,044.	0. 0	15.	2. 10
Low Fell	150	350.	0. 0	1,740.	0. 0	11.	12. 0
Wrekenton	126	-		416.	0. 0	3.	6. 0
TOTAL	5,794	12,833.	0. 0	59,063.	0. 0	10.	3. 0

× Number for which plans approved by Education Department.

The following table shows how the rate of loan per school, borrowed by Gateshead up to 1879, compared with certain other school boards.

(3) Name of Town	Rate of Loan per Scholar from P.W.L.C.
Birmingham	£14 - 6 - 11.75
Bradford	20 - 15 - 8.25
Leeds	15 - 10 - 5.75
Liverpool	15 - 7 - 3
London	18 - 11 - 4.75
Manchester	12 - 2 - 7.5
Sheffield	16 - 6 - 9.75
Gateshead	10 - 3 - 0

1. By 1900 outstanding liabilities totalled £153,524.2.8.9TR.1900 P.28.
2. 2nd TR. 1879, P.7.
3. IBID, P.8.

Of the Boards listed above, Gateshead was certainly the most economical; indeed it was below the national average rate of loan per scholar which was £12. 12. 0.<sup>(1)</sup> In the Third Triennial Report 1882, the School Board expressed its pride at providing its schools at a cost considerably less than board schools generally. Definitely not the attitude of a board which was extravagant.

Inefficiency of the schools in earning the Government grant cannot be advanced as a reason for the Board's financial straits, except that the number with the attendance to qualify for grants was not as high as the Board would have liked, despite the valiant efforts of the attendance officers, remission of fees in needy cases, the willingness of the Board to prosecute for non-attendance in suitable cases and the incentive of a prize scheme to encourage attendance.

The percentage of passes attained by the scholars in average attendance reflects great credit on the work of the schools and compares favourable with results gained by schools administered by other school boards and voluntary agencies.

---

1. 2 TR. 1879, P.8. In 1894 Board stated rate of loan per school seat about £11, 7 TR.1894, P.25.

(1)	Percentage of Scholars who passed in:		
	Reading	Writing	Arithmetic
Gateshead Board Schools	95	91	86
London Board Schools	88.94	85.62	81.04
C. of E. Schools	86.13	73.38	70.24
British and Other Sch.	87.53	79.91	73.58
Wesleyan Schools	85.58	76.67	73.49
R.C. Schools	89.3	81.81	73.24
Board Schools	86.74	82.01	70.09

Gateshead Board schools maintained the high percentage of passes which in 1883 was 90%,<sup>(2)</sup> 1884 - 92% and in 1885 - 91%.<sup>(3)</sup>

To translate the percentage of passes into actual grant earned; in 1879 the grant was 15/10d per scholar. It increased to 16/8 in 1880<sup>(4)</sup>, 17/1 in 1881, 16/10 in 1882, 17/10 in 1883, 18/2 in 1884 and 18/3 in 1885.<sup>(5)</sup> The increased grant<sup>(6)</sup>

- 
1. 2nd T.R. 1879, P.13.
  2. 4th T.R. 1885, P.6.
  3. The methods by which this high standard was achieved might be called in question judging from some inspector's reports: "...and in geography so many children, qualified by attendance were absent from the examination that I am unable to reckon 50% as having passed. I have felt obliged to reckon the absentees the more rigidly by the fact that an attempt was made to withhold from the elementary examination several backward children who were present in a classroom, but were said by the mistress to 'be absent' HMI's Report on Redheugh Girls School 25 June 1879. AND "The general efficiency of the school might be promoted if the instruction was somewhat less exclusively confined to preparation for the annual examination." HMI's report on Prior St. Boys' School 27 July 1883.
  4. 4 T.R. 1885, P.8.
  5. Exclusive of H.G.S.
  6. 1890 Av. grant reached 19/6d per scholar, SRM. Vol. J, P.132.

per head was earned by the better performance of the scholars in the examination, and the total grant also increased from year to year as the number of scholars, qualified by attendance to take the annual examination increased.

Gateshead School Board, therefore, was zealous in earning the maximum possible grant; perhaps too zealous judging by some inspectors' reports on their visits to schools:

"The highest merit grant would have been recommended without hesitation, but for the fact that at a visit without notice 73 boys were found at work in the school at 4.45 p.m., the time for dismissal, as stated in the time-table being 4 o'clock. Without in the least seeking to cast blame on individual teachers or to check the zeal which such work indicates, I wish to call the serious attention of the Board to the pernicious system of working overtime as the Inspection draws near as one calculated to injure weakly teachers and children and to set up an unreal standard of attainment." (1)

Nevertheless the School Board was forced to make heavy demands on the rating authority; demands which increased throughout the 1870's and although by 1881 the rate had been temporarily stabilised at 1/- in the £, the figure was still a heavy burden on the ratepayers, constituting, as it did, nearly 25% of the municipal rates, which were 4/1d in the £.

- 
1. H.M.I.'s report on Alexandra Road Boys School, 21 July 1885. A similar report is made on the Alexandra Road Infants' School where, on the same date the Inspector found 123 children working at 4.48 p.m.

How was the figure of 1/- in the £ composed? 5.5d or 45.8% of every 1/- was required for loan repayments to the P.W.L.C., and the remaining 6.5d or 54.2% of the rates was required for maintenance expenditure. These figures compared with national figures of 1.59d or 31.1% of precept being required for loan repayment and 3.41d or 68.9% of precept for maintenance.

The cost of Board Schools was kept to a minimum, compatible with providing an efficient education service, and was considerably less than most of Gateshead's neighbours. Figures quoted by the School Board in 1885 show the grant earned per child and the cost to the rates per child of Gateshead and some neighbouring school boards.(1)

School Board	Grant per Child	Cost to Rates per Child
Sunderland	19/3	4/6
Jarrow	18/3	9/5
So.Shields	18/9	9/-
Heworth	17/7	13/3
Gateshead	18/3	6/11

Compared to the national average, the cost per child to the rates was very low. The following table(2) shows that Gateshead earned more grant per scholar than the national average, maintained its pupils more economically, and made a lower demand on the rates.

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.F, P.393.

2. Appended to 4th T.R. 1885.

Board Schools	Total Expenditure per Child in Av. Attendance			Net Cost per Child to rates			Grant per Child		
	1883	1884	1885	1883	1884	1885	1883	1884	1885
England & Wales	£2. 1.6	£2. 1.3	£2. 1.8	17/-	16/1	16/3	16/2	16/6	17/1
Gateshead	£1.18.6	£1.17.1	£1.17.7	8/10	6/7	6/11	17/10	18/2	18/1

When expenditure is high and rising, only two courses are open; to obtain a higher income or to reduce expenditure. Mention has already been made of the care the Board took over its capital expenditure, but equal care was taken, by the Board and its Finance Committee, with the running expenses and a new sources of revenue were fully exploited. A few examples are pertinent.

In March 1876 the Accountant successfully appealed, to the Town Council, against the high rating assessment of Board Schools. The rateable value of Prior Street was reduced from £656 to £350: that of Alexandra Road from £225 to £140. It was hoped that further reductions would be obtained, as it was pointed out that the school boards of Leeds, Manchester, Middlesbrough, Stockton, Sunderland, North Shields and Harrow were either not rated or paid only a nominal sum.<sup>(1)</sup>

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.B, P.286.

A plan to increase revenue from school fees was put forward in August 1877<sup>(1)</sup> and became effective in January 1878.<sup>(2)</sup> The plan was that the headmaster should demand the payment of fees in advance. If a child presented himself at school without fees, he was to be refused admittance and the case reported to the District (Attendance) Officer. If, on investigation, the officer found the case to be genuine, provisional relief was to be granted, until the Relief Committee sat to determine remission of fees. If, however, the parent was unwilling to pay the fees, and the child was at no recognised school, then the officer had to obtain the consent of two Board members to bring the case before the magistrates. A notice of the New Regulations was given to all parents and guardians. The results were two-fold; the revenue from school fees increased as did the number in average attendance, qualified to earn a grant.

In February 1878<sup>(3)</sup> a proposal to reduce the fees, because of a trade depression and subsequent poverty, was resisted.

Remission of fees for necessitous cases was practiced by the School Board from its earliest days, not only because a child in average attendance could earn a grant, but because the Board genuinely wished poverty to be no bar to a child receiving an elementary education. In December 1876, however, there was

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.75 & 76.

2. IBID, P.112.

3. IBID, P.206.

a proposal that, after the commencement of the 1876 Act the Board should cease to remit fees, except in cases of emergency, and then only for two weeks. In cases of poverty the parents were to apply to the Poor Law Guardians for relief. As a result, a joint committee of Guardians and Board Members was set up for a trial period of three months. The Guardians only were to vote on cases of children in Voluntary schools and the Board members only, on cases of children attending board schools.

Perhaps the best example of the Board's vigilance over expenditure occurred in September 1878; a date by which members could claim to be experienced in school board finance. In that month a "Special Finance Committee Report on Economies" was presented to the Board.<sup>(1)</sup>

The report examined all possible sources of income and items of expenditure, and its proposals make interesting reading. It proposed to reduce the teaching staff,<sup>(2)</sup> to make the school caretakers pay for their own cleaning materials and to reduce the wages of some of them, to enforce rule 33 of the Code of Regulations which required that anyone damaging the Board's property should pay for the damage, to increase the sale of books, apparatus and stationery to pupils, to reorganise the Cookery school so that the pupils would be able to earn a higher

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.344-350.

2. Staff again reduced 1892, S.B.M. Vol.K, P.148.

grant in the examination and, finally, to be less benevolent in the remission of fees. By these economies it was hoped to save £500 during the ensuing year.

The report was accepted, but no immediate action was taken on the proposed reduction of staff which would obviously have proved a contentious decision. In outline the plan was to replace 2 certificated assistants by 2 ex-pupil teachers; 5 ex pupil-teachers by 5 pupil teachers and to dispense with the services of one pupil teacher. After due consideration, by the Managers of the schools involved, notice was served on the teachers involved terminating their engagements as from February 1879. However, Mr. Bowler, the headmaster of Prior Street Boys' School, obtained an extension of notice for Mr. Hedley, his certificated assistant, to enable him to complete his probationary year.<sup>(1)</sup> A decision which showed that the Board could temper economy with humanity.

The foregoing are only a few important examples of the Board's extreme care to curtail expenditure and obtain the maximum possible income before issuing a precept to the rating authority. Similar actions were taken from time to time; all capital expenditure was carefully scrutinised and recurring

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.386-87.

expenses were frequently examined to see if they were still necessary or excessive.

A special circumstance which occasionally caused the Board temporary financial embarrassment was the fact that the Town Council was often late in paying the precept. This was caused by the difference between the Board's accounting periods and those of the Borough. The result was that the Board, although in expectation of funds from the rating authority, often had to incur an overdraft<sup>(1)</sup> to meet its expenses until the precept was honoured. The overdraft was not missed by the District Auditor, who pointed out that School Boards were not empowered to contract any short term loans and suggested that a deputation should meet officials of the rating authority to ensure a prompter payment of precepts.

As early as 11 November 1874, the Chairman and Mr. Allhusen were appointed to meet the Corporation Finance Committee to arrange "a more regular payment of precepts".<sup>(2)</sup> Their efforts cannot have prevailed as, on 13 October 1875, the Chairman, Dr. Banning, Messrs. Allhusen & France and the Clerk to the Board were appointed to hold an early conference with the Corporation on the same subject.<sup>(3)</sup> The more powerful second

- 
1. In 1878 the Board issued instructions for the Guidance of the Treasurer which included "That the Treasurer for the time being be and hereby is instructed to pay and honour all cheques..... whether such account be overdrawn by the payment thereof or be in credit or otherwise" S.B.M. Vol.C, P.429-430.
  2. S.B.M. Vol.B, P.125.
  3. IBID, P.221.

delegation obviously met with some success, as the District Auditor's comments on overdrafts ceased for nearly a decade, only to re-emerge in the early 1880's.

In September 1884,<sup>(1)</sup> the Auditor said that he had warned the School Board in the previous half year's report of actions which had been repeated, namely the incurrence of overdrafts on the General Account. Despite excellent book-keeping, the Auditor said that he was forced to make an unfavourable report to the Education Department. In November 1884,<sup>(2)</sup> the Auditor surcharged<sup>(3)</sup> the Chairman and the Rev. S. Atkinson, who had signed the cheques, for the interest incurred on overdrafts which, the Auditor stated, were frequent and often large. He pointed out that the Treasurer<sup>(4)</sup> must always have a working balance which would only be achieved by larger precepts. Here the Auditor was missing the point as the School Board's demands to the rating authority were adequate, if they were paid promptly.

Again, in May 1885<sup>(5)</sup> the Auditor's report was critical of the Board's financial policy, and Board Members were surcharged £27. 7. 11. for interest on the overdraft during the preceding six months. The Auditor noted the bad policy, which was illegal under the Act, of obtaining an overdraft on the strength of expected

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.F, P.145.      2. IBID P.19, et seq.
  3. Board members were surcharged again in June 1893.
  4. The Treasurer himself had reminded the Board of its overdraft which was 9 months old and had said that SB's had no power to borrow money advances should be strictly temporary. Letter Nov.1884. S.B.M. Vol.F, P.196-197.
  5. S.B.M. Vol.F, P.324.

income, in this case the Government Grant.

Having summarised the Board's financial difficulties and shown the circumstances which produced them and having noted the Board's efforts to overcome its problems internally, it is now pertinent to examine the policy, which the Board adopted from 1878 onwards, to obtain assistance from the Central Government authorities in solving its financial problems.

The first step was taken in March 1879<sup>(1)</sup> when the Board addressed a petition to the House of Commons appearing against the proposed Public Works Loan Bill. W.H. James Esq., M.P. for the Borough, was asked to present it.<sup>(2)</sup> The substance of the petition<sup>(3)</sup> was an appeal against the increase in interest rates and the reduction of the number of years over which repayment might be made to 30. It pointed out that the Board's existing repayments constituted a heavy sum yearly<sup>(4)</sup> and that any adverse change would so seriously hamper the Board's work that it may have to be declared a board in default.

The Board's petition had no effect, as the 1879 Act increased the rates of interest payable and reduced the term of years over which loans could be repaid.

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.441.
  2. IBID, P.442.
  3. See Appendix No.11(a).
  4. By 1882 the Board had borrowed £69,116 + £12,642 for work in hand £62,718.18.5d was still outstanding.

The next step taken by the Board was in 1882, when the Board asked the P.W.L.C. if its method of loan repayment could be changed.<sup>(1)</sup> Currently, the Board was repaying 1/50th of the principal and interest on the remaining loan, annually. What the Board wished to do was to repay its contracted loans by means of an annuity, that is by equal instalments which would include both principal and interest. The obvious merit of such a scheme was that the Board would need the same amount each year for loan repayment (unless further loans were raised) and would be able to budget more accurately. The other advantage of the annuity was that some of the interest would be deferred into future repayments when, money having depreciated, the burden would not be so great.

The request was only partially successful. Permission was given by the P.W.L.C. for the loans contracted on 10 April 1878, 20 November 1878 and 8 January 1879 to be commuted to annual payments of £330, in half yearly instalments of £165 up to 30 June 1927.<sup>(2)</sup> However, it must be remembered that the bulk of the loans contracted by the Board were not affected, therefore the problem of loan repayment was still very great.

- 
1. Appendix 11(b).
  2. S.B.M. Vol.E, P.125 & 126.

\*

Owing to an error in numbering there is no Page 184. The text is complete.

A different approach was made to the Central Authorities in 1884. In April, the School Board sent an open letter (Appendix No.11(c)) to all the school boards of England and Wales asking if they were prepared to support an application, to the Vice President of the Education Department, for special relief where the school rate exceeded a certain amount. Support was forthcoming from Brighton, Ipswich, Halifax, Swansea, Bradford and Jarrow;<sup>(1)</sup> so the Clerk was instructed to arrange a joint deputation to the Vice President. In June, a Memorial<sup>(2)</sup> was presented to the Vice-President asking for special relief for the rates. It was followed up, on 9 July 1884,<sup>(3)</sup> by a joint deputation, from Gateshead and the other school boards, which had replied to the April letter, which waited upon the Vice President to reinforce the views expressed in the Memorial. Gateshead was represented by the Chairman, the Vice Chairman, Mr. J. Lucas and the Rev. A.F. Riley. Once again the services of W.H. James Esq., M.P. were enlisted, and on 16 July a vote of thanks was made to him and to the Editor of the School Board Chronicle "for their valuable services in connection with the deputation which recently waited upon the Vice President".<sup>(4)</sup> About 12 M.P's accompanied the deputation.<sup>(5)</sup>

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.F, P.59.
  2. Appendix No.11(d).
  3. S.B.M. Vol.F, P.108.
  4. IBID, P.107.
  5. Newcastle Daily Chronicle 6/11/86.

The immediate result was a letter from the Education Department to the Treasury in which the Vice-President of the Council stated that he was satisfied that nothing caused greater discontent than:

"the large rates now required to meet the annual charge for school building and the discontent is greatly aggravated by the fact that the rate of interest which was originally fixed by the Elementary Education Acts of 1870 & 1873 has been materially increased by the Act of 1879 and that the expectations held out in 1870 that the rate would never exceed 3d in the £ have been disappointed." (1)

The Treasury's reaction was slower and did not go as far as the deputation would have hoped to reduce its "discontent". In March 1885, a Treasury minute(2) was published revising the rates of loan and conditions of loan repayment. The "Times" carried the details as follows:(3)

<u>Interest &amp; Term of Years</u>	<u>Modified to:</u>
$3\frac{1}{2}\%$ over 20 years	$3\frac{1}{2}\%$ over 35 years
$3\frac{3}{4}\%$ over 30 years	$3\frac{1}{2}\%$ over 35 years
4 % over 40 years	$3\frac{1}{4}\%$ over 40 years
$4\frac{1}{4}\%$ over 50 years	4 % over 50 years

Repayment by means of annuity would be allowed on loans repaid over a period of time up to 35 years.

- 
1. Quoted in Newcastle Daily Chronicle 6/11/86.
  2. Quoted in S.B.M. Vol.F, P.274 - 276.
  3. IBID.

Unfortunately, the revised conditions only applied to new loans, therefore the Gateshead School Board felt that the concessions were not as liberal as had been hoped for, especially since they did little to help Gateshead, whose loans were old ones.(1)

The dissatisfaction felt at the ineffectiveness of the Treasury's concessions, prompted the School Board to compose another Memorial, in June 1885, showing that the relaxations allowed by the Treasury minute were insufficient, and requesting more relief for "poor populous districts." The Memorial(2) was addressed to the Chancellor of the Exchequer, as the Education Department had declined to take any further action.

The appeal was made by the Board on the recommendation of its School Management Committee. The burden of the Board's case was that the conditions under which loans could be obtained, which had been laid down in the Education Acts of 1870 & 1873, had been materially altered by the Act of 1879. The Board felt that the proposed interest rate reduction was inadequate to meet the necessities of the case. It felt that, in the words of the Vice President of Committee of Council on Education, school boards "ought to be restored to the position which they occupied before the Act of 1879 was passed." The Board felt that no fresh

---

1. Up to 1885 G.S.R's outstanding loans were £58,970.5.6. at  $3\frac{1}{2}\%$ ; £649.12.0. at  $3\frac{3}{4}\%$  and £14,093.13.6. at  $4\frac{1}{4}\%$ .

2. Appendix No.11(e) from S.B.M. Vol.F, P.352.

legislation was needed for this purpose as Section 97 of the 1870 Act, which allowed special grants to poor populous districts, had been specially designed to assist poor districts, but the section had been practically inoperative.<sup>(1)</sup>

Since there is no evidence in the Board's minutes or reports of any change in interest rates or the length of loan repayments, it can only be deduced that the Memorial did not meet with any success as subsequent loans were raised on the revised terms ( $3\frac{1}{2}\%$  over 35 years), published in the Treasury Minute of March 1885, and the terms of existing loans remained unchanged.

However, the Board's efforts to obtain financial relief did not cease. The next occasion the Gateshead Board took action, to goad the Central Authorities into assisting school boards with a heavy burden of repayment, was in 1886, when the Royal Commission, then sitting, circularised school boards to obtain their opinions on the working of Education Acts. Gateshead School Board organised a conference<sup>(2)</sup> of representatives of local school boards to consider, and if possible to frame an answer to, the Royal Commission's first question which was:

- 
1. G.S.B. was the first school board to draw grant, under Sec.97, In 1883 it drew £176.10.5; in 1884 £473.2.0. and estimated figure for 1885 was over £500.
  2. Newcastle Daily Chronicle 6/11/86.

"Is there anything in the Education Acts which hinders the satisfactory education of the children in your schools? (1)

At the conference, the Chairman of the Board outlined the action that Gateshead had taken to draw the attention of the Education Department and the Treasury to the unequal way in which the Education Acts pressed on different places. The Board felt that the Education Department's letter (quoted P.186) summed up the answer they wished to give to this question. It hoped that neighbouring school boards would be able to return identical answers and the Board undertook to ask the boards which had joined the 1884 deputation to return similar answers.

Gateshead's proposal that joint action should be taken was carried unanimously and all delegates were supplied with a copy of Gateshead's intended answer so that it could be laid before their respective boards.

In view of the Royal Commission's question and the School Board's reply, based on the Education Department's assessment of the financial situation, it is inexplicable that the Gateshead Board was not called to give evidence to substantiate its arguments; an action it was only too willing to

---

1. Questionnaire in S.B.M. Vol.G, foll.P.185.

take.<sup>(1)</sup> However, its answer is printed as an appendix to the Commission's Report.<sup>(2)</sup>

The Board was also quick to take action, in 1888, when proposed legislation threatened to deprive it of much needed grants. In that year it was proposed, in Clause 23 of the Local Government Bill, that the local authority should obtain any relief given by the Central Government to poor areas relative to Section 97 of the 1870 Act; this would have been disadvantageous to the School Board. A deputation from Gateshead, therefore, waited on Sir Hugh Owen, the permanent secretary of the Local Government Board, early in 1888, as the Board was afraid that unless concerted and immediate action was taken by the school boards of poor districts, then the Clause would be passed, thereby inflicting considerable injury on poorer districts.

On 11 July, therefore, the Board sent a letter and a copy of its Memorial<sup>(3)</sup> to those school boards in receipt of grant under Section 97. That Gateshead should instigate the Memorial was appropriate, as it had been the first board to receive such a grant and in 1888, when it received £644,<sup>(4)</sup> it was the board which received the largest grant distributed under Section 97. In the words of the Chairman in his annual report to the Board:

- 
1. "It certainly does appear a most unaccountable oversight on the part of the Royal Commission not to have enquired exhaustively into the whole subject of school board loans and the amount of school rate of one District, as compared with another, with a view of affording some special assistance to school boards in poor populous places." 5th T.R. 1888.
  2. Appendix No. 11(f).
  3. S.B.M. Vol.H, P.49.
  4. News Cutting, S.B.M. Vol.H, P.46.

"Measured by the 97th Section of the Act Gateshead was the poorest Borough in England; that was to say the amount of work they were called upon to do in proportion to the rateable value of the town was greater than any other." (1)

Gateshead's case for which it sought support was as follows. Of the £3,400,000 spent annually in educational grants, only £6,700 was disbursed under Section 97. These grants, although not likely to increase, were of vital importance to poor school boards as they were paid only in cases where the rateable value was small and when a large amount of accommodation had been provided. Of the £6,700 paid out, £2,000 went to Wales, the remainder being distributed almost entirely to the Counties of Durham, Warwickshire, Gloucestershire and Nottinghamshire. The report of the Royal Commission on Education was expected and comprehensive legislation was impending. The Board's conclusion was that no action, relative to education, should be taken in a Local Government Bill, especially since the Government had already exempted school boards from the operation of Clause 8 of the Bill. In support of its Memorial, the Board quoted Sir F.R. Sandford's reply to the Royal Commission which, although wishing to abolish the school boards, recommended that these grants should remain as part of the Imperial expenditure on education.

---

1. News Cutting S.B.M. Vol.H, P.46.

The Board's efforts to have Clause 23 removed from the Bill were successful, as the Triennial Report in 1894 stated:

"It will be remembered that when the Local Government Bill was before Parliament in 1888, a clause provided that this grant (Section 97) should cease to be paid by the Education Department but largely through the action of the School Board and Corporation the clause was finally struck out of this Bill and the School District is so much the richer." (1)

The next problem which faced the Board was loans 11, 12 and part of 14, which had been raised at  $4\frac{1}{4}\%$ , the Board being determined to do everything in its power to reduce the high interest rate on them. In September 1889, therefore, the Board was in correspondence with Charles Dagnall & Co. of London in an attempt to borrow £12,750, the unexpired portion of the above loans, at  $3\frac{1}{2}\%$  so that it could pay off the existing  $4\frac{1}{4}\%$  loans to the P.W.L.C.(2) A letter from Dagnall & Co. of the 4 Sept. 1889(3) said that the Board could borrow the required sum over any period to suit the Board provided such period was within the terms allowed by the Education Department. Dagnall & Co. suggested that the period of the loan should be for the unexpired number of years of the existing loans. The legal fees involved would be about £80 and reference was made to the fact that Dagnall & Co. had recently effected a loan of £15,000 to the Gateshead Poor Law Guardians for the new Workhouse.

1. For 3 years ended November 1894 grant under Section 97 was £2,552
2. It seems that the Education Department granted permission, in individual cases, for loans to be raised privately.
3. S.B.M. Vol.H, P.361.

Evidently the Board felt that the terms of the proposed loan were not good enough and communicated its views to Dagnall & Co., as on 10th September<sup>(1)</sup> Dagnall & Co. replied to a Board letter of the 9th September, regretting that the Board did not feel that a reduction from  $4\frac{1}{4}\%$  to  $3\frac{1}{2}\%$  was sufficient inducement for change. It pointed out that the saving on the loans referred to would be approximately £2,900 or £72 per annum. One of the Board's objections had obviously been that the Town Council was borrowing money at a cheaper rate, but, as Dagnall & Co. pointed out, they were short term loans.

A further letter from the financiers on 28 September<sup>(2)</sup> dealt with the Board's criticism of the £80 charge for legal fees, which were heavier than the equivalent charge made to the Poor Law Guardians for their £15,000 loan. Dagnall & Co. explained that loans, under the Poor Law Acts, were exempt from stamp duty of 2/6d per cent, but school board loans, under the Education Acts, were not exempt. Secondly the board's loan of £12,800 approximately would be divided into two deeds, one for £10,500 over 41 years: the other for £2,250 over 44 years, therefore extra legal expenses would be incurred. Bearing these points in mind, the Gateshead Board was actually being charged less than the Poor Law Guardians.

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.H, P.362.

2. IBID, P.388.

At its October meeting<sup>(1)</sup> the Board's Finance Committee recommended that Dagnall & Co's offer should be accepted at a cost of £80. In the event it was not, as new negotiations with the Prudential Assurance Co. produced favourable conditions and in February 1890<sup>(2)</sup> the Board borrowed £12,650 from the Prudential at  $3\frac{1}{2}\%$ . The sum was borrowed in two deeds; one of £10,400 repayable by means of an annuity of 82 equal  $\frac{1}{2}$  yearly instalments of £239.16.4d. and the other of £2,250 repayable by an annuity of 86 equal  $\frac{1}{2}$  yearly instalments of £50.16.1d.<sup>(3)</sup>

In June 1894<sup>(4)</sup> permission was obtained, from the Education Department, to borrow £14,560 at  $3\frac{1}{2}\%$  over 50 years from the Prudential Assurance Co. Ltd. for building Brighton Avenue School.

In September 1895, a loan of £13,000 was obtained from the Ecclesiastical Commissioners at  $\checkmark$ £3.2.6.<sup>(5)</sup> per cent, repayable over 50 years to be repaid by 100 equal half-yearly instalments of £257.16.6 which comprised principal and interest.

In January 1896 occurred the Board's greatest effort to reduce its rate of loan repayment, when loans numbered 1-6 and 23, 25, 28, 30 and 32, amounting to £67,871.3.6. were repaid

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.H, P.362.

2. IBID, P.495-6.

3. The newly contracted loans were renumbered 22 & 23.

4. S.B.M. Vol.L, P.268.

5. P.W.L.B. rate was £3. 10.0. per cent.

to the P.W.L.B. by money reborrowed from the Admiralty Commissioners at  $3\frac{1}{4}\%$ .

The change to this loan is interesting, as at first the P.W.L.B. offered no objection, but the Treasury stepped in and refused its consent, when the negotiations were almost complete. Long and tedious correspondence ensued, and the Treasury eventually relented, sanctioning the P.W.L.B's preliminary approval. The subsequent results of this reborrowing are also interesting. The Treasury subsequently issued a minute forbidding premature repayments to the P.W.L.B. except on the repayment of a very substantial premium regulated by the price of Consols, and in 1897 the P.W.L.B. reduced its rate of interest to  $2\frac{5}{4}\%$  over 30 years.(1)

The agitation by Gateshead and other school boards of poor districts, during the 1880's resulted in the passing of the "Necessitous Schools Act" officially known as the Elementary Education Act 1897. The Clerk to the Gateshead Board acknowledged(2) that most of the credit for securing the passage of the act was due to the Town Council of West Ham and the efforts of Mr. Ernest Gray M.P. However, there can be no doubt that the continuous action of the Gateshead School Board over many years also played a part. During the debates in the House of Commons

---

1. 8th T.R. 1897, P.22.

2. 8th T.R. 1897, P.25.

on the Elementary Education Bill 1897, Gateshead, West Ham, Aston and the Forest of Dean were frequently referred to as typical places showing the unequal incidence of school rates.

The main provision of the 1897 Act<sup>(1)</sup> so far as finance was concerned was to provide a special grant on a sliding scale. The grant varied from 7/6d to 16/6d for each child in average attendance, thus for every 1d of the school rate above 3d<sup>(2)</sup> a grant of 4d per child may be paid by the Education Department. The immediate result for Gateshead was a substantial increase in grant.<sup>(3)</sup>

Although the 1897 Act afforded the Gateshead Board a measure of relief, local criticism<sup>(4)</sup> about the high cost of education, and consequently the high school rate, continued. In May 1901 the Chairman of the Board defended the Board's expenditure and pointed out that critics always attacked the expense and never considered the amount or scope of the work done. In his article<sup>(5)</sup> he quoted the following comparative figures which are of interest.

- 
1. 8th T.R. 1897, P.28.
  2. A modification of the principle Gateshead had advocated in 1884. See Appendix No.11(c), 5th Recommendation.
  3. Grant under Sec.97 1870 Act as amended in 1897. 1895 - £1054.1.0. 1896 - £1371.15.6; 1897 - £3791.15.10; 1898 - £3706.14.10; 1899 - £3477.18.0; 1900 - £3746.7.2; 9th T.R. 1900, P.28
  4. There are several examples in News Cuttings.
  5. Quoted in Newcastle Leader 9/5/01.

	<u>1891</u>	<u>1901</u>
Teachers	300	488
Pupils	11,000	17,470
Loans	£74,000	£157,000
Grants	£ 9,000	£ 16,500
Precept	£ 9,500	£ 22,400
Population	85,000	105,000
S.B. Rate	10d	1/5d
Teachers Salaries	£14,000	£ 34,700

He added the point that the cost to the rate per child in Gateshead of 15/2d still compared favourably with the national average of 19/4d.

It would seem from glancing at the above figures that the Chairman's attack on the Board's critics was justified as, despite the facts, that the number of children receiving instruction had increased and that loans and teachers salaries had more than doubled; the amount of grant earned had also increased, while the school rate had only gone up by 70%.<sup>(1)</sup>

The foregoing chapter has shown that the School Board was continually faced with financial difficulties, which were recognised by the School Board, who seized every opportunity to effect economies and fight for relief. The Board was always in the van petitioning Government departments and stimulating other school boards to vigorous action. The Board did not always

---

1. Real increase is partly concealed by the increased rateable value of the Borough.

obtain the results, which its efforts deserved, but the Board was determined to prevent an increase of, and if possible to reduce, the financial burden borne by the ratepayers. This was done, not by lowering educational standards or falling short of its duty towards the children in its care, but by internal economy and by presenting Gateshead's case to the Central Government to inspire it to action.

---

CHAPTER XThe Teaching Staff.Teachers

The classes of Teachers recognised by the Board are as follows:

- (a) Certificated Teachers.
- (b) Certificated Assistant Teachers.
- (c) Ex-Pupil Teachers who have completed their apprenticeship with credit.
- (d) Pupil Teachers who must have served a previous period of probation.
- (e) Candidates or Monitors who must intend in due course to become Pupil-Teachers or Assistant Teachers. (1)

This chapter deals with the first three classes of teacher listed above<sup>(2)</sup> and seeks to give the numbers of teachers in the different classes, employed at various times, to give an outline of their salaries and conditions of service, and of the relationship existing between the Board and its employees.

Numbers and Classes of Teachers

The first appointment of teaching staff by the Board was in 1872<sup>(3)</sup> and obviously the number and quality of teachers increased as the work of the Board expanded.

1. Code of Regulations for the Guidance of Teachers 1878.
2. Pupil-Teachers and Candidates are dealt with in Chapter XI
3. High Level Road.

In 1876 there were 19 certificated and 52 other teachers for a total of 16 departments organised in nine schools.(1)

In 1879 the Board published its first detailed list of teachers:(2)

GRADE OF TEACHER	MALE	FEMALE
Head Masters of Large Schools	6	-
" " # Temp. "	1	-
Head Mistresses of Large Schools	-	5
" " " Infants' "	-	8
" " " Temp. "	-	4
Certificated Assistant Masters	5	-
" " Mistresses	-	5
Assistant Masters	5	-
" Mistresses	-	9
Assistant (Art.32 C3) Mistresses	-	6
Male Pupil Teachers	20	-
Female Pupil Teachers	-	48
Monitors (Candidates) Male	5	-
" " Female	-	15
	42	100
Part-time Singing Master	1	
		143

There were, in 1879, 24 schools or departments each with its own head teacher and 118 assistant teachers. The average was less than 5 assistants per department, although the distribution was actually based on the size of school. The number of assistants employed is interesting, however, when related to the following statement:

- 
1. 1st T.R. 1876, P.5.
  2. 2nd T.R. 1879, P.30.

"On opening the new schools the Board have (as a matter of economy) appointed a somewhat larger staff than the minimum required by the Code. It is evident that having gone to the expense of providing school accommodation it would be worse than useless to appoint an inadequate staff.

" Hence a larger number of assistant teachers, than are usually employed in old-established schools, has been found necessary in the first instance, in order to cope with the difficulty of bringing such large numbers of backward children up to the grant standard; but in the case of every school which seems to have arrived at maturity the staff has been reduced to the minimum required by the code." (1)

There is evidence that the School Board put this policy into practice. When Sunderland Road school was opened, the staff was composed of the teachers from the temporary school, several teachers who, being surplus to requirements, were transferred from other schools and the minimum number of new appointments.(2) A similar policy operated in 1880 when Windmill Hills and Oakwellgate schools were opened, and there are many other instances of staff being transferred from a school with a surplus of staff to one which was below establishment.

It was not until 1883, however, that a comprehensive survey of school staffing was made. In June, a special committee was appointed for the purpose. The Committee's report, presented in September and accepted unanimously, proposed that the current policy of staffing schools, according to the circumstances, should be replaced by the following scheme.(3)

- 
1. 2nd T.R.1879, P.15.
  2. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.450-452.
  3. S.B.M. Vol.E, P.398.

The staff, in any school, should be determined, for the ensuing twelve months, in the month prior to the annual inspection and should be based on the average attendance figures for the year just ending, unless there were any special circumstances. For all boys', girls' and mixed departments, the following scale was laid down:

		<u>No. of Pupils</u>
Principal Teacher	=	20
Each Certificates Assistant	=	60
Each Assistant (Ex P/T)	=	50
Each Assistant (Art 84)	=	40
Each Pupil Teacher (2nd, 3rd or 4th Year)	=	30

In infants' departments the same scale was to apply for assistant teachers, but the number of pupils assigned to the head teacher in small infants' departments was to vary according to the number in average attendance; there being no assistant if the average was less than 120, and no more than two assistants if the attendance was less than 200.

In schools where no pupil teachers were employed, the staff was to be calculated according to the Government Code, unless there were special circumstances. Where pupil-teachers were employed, then the full complement (i.e. 3 pupil-teachers per head teacher and 1 for each assistant) was to be engaged

---

before additional assistants were appointed. Candidates and first year pupil-teachers were not to be considered as part of the staff, except that their numbers and ability were not to be overlooked when additions were contemplated.

In 1885 the scale was revised as follows:(1)

	<u>No. of Pupils</u>
Head Teacher .	= 20
Each Certificated Asst. Teacher	= 65
Each Assistant (Ex P/T)	= 55
Each Assistant (Art 84)	= 40
Each 4th Year Pupil Teacher	= 40
" 3rd " " "	= 40
" 2nd " " "	= 30
" 1st " " "	= 20

A final revision of the staffing scale was made in 1892:(2)

	<u>No. of Pupils</u>
Each Certificated Assistant	= 70
Each Assistant (Ex P/T)	= 50
Each Assistant (Art 68)	= 30
Each 3rd & 4th Year Pupil Teacher	= 30
" 1st & 2nd " " "	= Free
Head Teacher	= 20

In Grant Street, Low Fell, Wrekenton and Pipewellgate schools, the head teacher counted for 50 pupils, and the one at Mount Pleasant for 40.

No further detailed figures of staff employed are available until 1894, when the following table was produced:(3)

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.F, P.311.
  2. S.B.M. Vol.K, P.139.
  3. 7th T.R. 1894, P.31.

GRADE OF TEACHER	MALE	FEMALE	TOTAL
Certificated Principal Teachers:			
Trained	10	23	33
* Untrained	4	7	11
Certificated Assistants:			
Trained	41	24	65
* Untrained	6	21	27
Ex Pupil-Teachers	20	79	99
Article 68	-	15	15
4th Year Pupil Teachers	2	14	16
3rd Year Pupil Teachers	4	26	30
2nd Year Pupil Teachers	9	37	46
1st Year Pupil Teachers	2	11	13
Candidates	8	20	13
Special Teachers	4	3	7
TOTALS:	110	280	390

Further figures were produced in 1897.(1)

GRADE OF TEACHER	MALE	FEMALE	TOTAL
Certificated Principal Teachers:			
Trained	13	19	32
* Untrained	4	10	14
Certificated Assistants:			
Trained	46	39	85
* Untrained	8	33	41
Ex Pupil-Teachers	12	91	103
Article 68	-	8	8
Time Expired Pupil Teachers	4	20	24
4th Year Pupil Teachers	5	23	28
3rd Year Pupil Teachers	10	49	59
2nd Year Pupil Teachers	4	21	25
Candidates	6	4	10
Special Teachers	5	5	10
TOTALS:	117	322	439

\* A teacher who had obtained a certificate, by study while teaching but who had not undergone formal training or at a Training College.

In 1900<sup>(1)</sup> the Board produced the following table.

The number of staff did not alter substantially during the final three years of the Board's existence.

GRADE OF TEACHER	MALE	FEMALE	TOTAL
Certificated Principal Teacher:			
Trained	16	22	38
Untrained	2	12	14
Certificated Assistant Teacher:			
Trained	56	47	103
Untrained	11	59	70
Ex Pupil-Teachers	18	110	128
Article 68	-	8	8
Time Expired Pupil-Teachers	2	14	16
4th Year Pupil Teachers	2	10	12
3rd Year Pupil Teachers	3	21	24
2nd Year Pupil Teachers	5	29	34
Candidates	8	26	34
Special Teachers	3	4	7
TOTALS	126	362	488

The preceding tables indicate an expansion of the teaching staff. On the basis of 44 departments and 339 assistants in 1894, there were over 7 assistants per department. By 1897 with 46 departments and 383 assistants, there were over 8 assistants per department; a ratio that was maintained in 1900. Of course, the actual distribution of staff varied according to the size of the department and the standard of work taught.

---

1. 9th T.R.1900, P.35.

Two other points of interest, which emerge from the tables, are the steady increase in the number of certificated assistants and the employment of special teachers for music, cookery and manual instruction.

The most important fact to emerge, however, is the increased number of trained teachers, from 98 in 1894, to 117 in 1897, and 141 in 1900. As early as 1888 the Board had regretted the fact that only  $\frac{2}{3}$ rd of the Head teachers were trained; that only 4 trained assistants were employed in the girls departments and none in the infants departments.(1)

"All experience tends to prove without the possibility of doubt, that as a class the trained teacher is superior to those who have obtained a certificate while acting teachers.

Notwithstanding some notable exceptions, the fact is indisputable that many 'acting teachers' are slenderly furnished for their work. Is there not a danger that in the long run the character of the schools may be lowered and that persons intending to become teachers may be impressed with the idea that ripe scholarship and extensive reading are by no means requisite to secure charge of elementary schools?" (2)

The above comment was written prior to the establishment of Day Training Colleges in 1890 which did much to improve teaching standards, which gave increased opportunities to those

- 
1. 5th T.R. 1888, P.13.
  2. IBID.

who wished to go to training college, and whose success is reflected in the increased numbers of trained teachers during the next decade.

### Teachers Salaries

When the Board first employed teachers, no salary scales existed. Possibly, information was obtained from other school boards and voluntary schools about the current rates for head teachers and assistants, but in the event, salaries were fixed by the Board.

A minute in 1877 bears this out:

"....that the head teachers be paid as heretofore by a certain fixed amount, fixed by the Board, according to the several merits of the case." (1)

The early Boards encountered some difficulty in deciding what the 'fixed amount' should be. When Mr. Bowler was appointed, in 1872, his salary occasioned much discussion. At first it was proposed to pay him £175 p.a., with no allowance for rent, coal or fuel.(2) A counter proposal was to pay him £100 +  $\frac{1}{3}$  of the Government grant; an amendment sought unsuccessfully to raise this figure to £125.(3) Finally, the salary was fixed at £100 with  $\frac{1}{3}$  of the grant.(4) On 12 March 1873, the Board asked Mr. Bowler to accept a fixed sum, in lieu of the grant, but he declined. However, the grants did not come up to expectations,

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.55.
  2. S.B.M. Vol.A, P.135.
  3. IBID, P.153.
  4. IBID, P.168.

because of poor attendance, so Mr. Bowler asked for an increase in salary. The Board, recognising that the poor results were not his fault, guaranteed his salary at £130.(1)

The salaries of other principal teachers in early Board schools are interesting. There was no real plan to which the Board adhered, although the principals of large permanent schools naturally received more than those in small or temporary schools.

On his transfer to Prior Street, Mr. Bowler received £180 p.a.(2) The headmaster of Alexandra Road was paid £170 p.a. while the mistresses of the girls' and infants' departments were paid £100 and £85 p.a. respectively.(3) At Sheriff Hill, Mr. Harding was appointed at a salary of £110 p.a.(4) The headmaster of Teams temporary school was appointed at a salary of £100 p.a., and the headmistress at £80 p.a.(5) At Grant Street, when it came under Board management, the mistress was given £70 p.a.(6) while at Low Fell, Mrs. Lily, who had been in charge of the school before its takeover, was paid £65 p.a.(7) She soon retired and her successor was paid £60 p.a.(8)

Two interesting points emerge from a study of the above appointments. Firstly, except for Mr. Bowler's appointment to High Level Road, no mention is made of a head teacher receiving a

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.A, P.277.      2. S.B.M. Vol.B, P.62.  
 3. Originally Master £150; mistress £90, S.B.M. Vol.B, P.120.  
 4. S.B.M. Vol.B, P.87.      5. IBID, P.106.  
 6. IBID, P.322-324.      7. IBID, P.109.  
 8. IBID, P.198.

share of the Government grant and secondly there was no provision made for increases in salary.

Increases of salary were certainly applied for and sometimes granted. One interesting case concerned Mr. Harding who applied for an increase of salary in 1875. It was refused, but shortly afterwards he was appointed Accountant,<sup>(1)</sup> and subsequently Clerk and Accountant to the Board, at a much enhanced salary.<sup>(2)</sup>

Assistant teachers were paid according to status and sex.<sup>(3)</sup> The salaries of male certificated assistants were usually between £70 - £85 depending on the size of the school and probably on the class of certificate held; female certificated assistants were usually appointed at a salary of £60 - £70.<sup>(4)</sup> Male ex pupil-teachers usually received £60 p.a. and their female counterparts £45 p.a. As with principal teachers, their appointment mentioned no machinery for increases.

The first two Boards (1870-76) may be excused for the scales of payment, which grew up piecemeal, for they had few criteria to assist them and busy as they were with their primary object, the provision of school places, they were unable to take a long look at the situation and develop a system.

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.B, P.207.
  2. As from 14 Feb.1878; S.B.M. Vol.C, P.119-120.
  3. Salaries of Assistants are based on numerous appointments in Minutes Books A & B.
  4. In 1870 the National average salary of male certificated assistants was £96 p.a. and of females, £58 p.a. Smith 'A History of English Elementary Education 1760-1902' P.300.

In April 1876,<sup>(1)</sup> however, the Second Board did appoint a Committee to consider the whole question of teachers salaries with a view to recognising the principle of payment by results. An interim report, presented in May,<sup>(2)</sup> after consultation with other school boards, said that the principle of payment by results should be recognised. A decision was deferred, as the annual inspection was pending. In fact nothing further was done probably because, the triennial election being due in November, the Board did not wish to commit its successor to a particular policy.

The Third Board soon faced the problem. In June 1877, a committee was appointed to consider several applications for salary increases.<sup>(3)</sup> In July, it was proposed that each principal teacher's salary should be augmented by 10% of the Government grant earned by his or her department,<sup>(4)</sup> an amendment to set up a committee to consider the question resulted in it being referred to the committee set up in June.

The committee reported on the 8 August 1877 and recommended that head teachers' salaries should continue to be fixed by the Board.

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.B, P.292.      2. IBID, P.309.  
 3. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.20.      4. IBID, P.39.

"But in addition to the fixed salary 10% of the total grant received by each Department shall be paid to the Head teacher as soon as possible after the result of the examination is known. A teacher entering after the commencement of the school year, or leaving before the close, shall be paid a proportionate amount of the next grant.

"In case the grant shall be reduced on account of some imperfection in the Building, no part of the sum thus deducted will be taken from the amount which would otherwise be due to the teachers. Every case for an increase of salary (that is the fixed amount) will be considered on its own merits." (1)

These arrangements were to apply from the 1 May 1878 and a circular explaining them was to be sent to head teachers.

The committee also recommended the following scales for assistant teachers:

Ex pupil teachers - 1st Year Male	£60
Female	£45
2nd Year Higher	
Male	£65
Female	£50

No further increases were to be made until the assistant had successfully passed the Certificate Examination, when the following scale would apply:

Certificated Assistants passing in:		
3rd Division	Male £65	Female £55 <sup>(2)</sup>
2nd Division	Male £70	Female £60
1st Division	Male £75	Female £65

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.55.
  2. Salary is quoted as £50 in Code of Regulations for the Guidance of Teachers 1878.

Further increases were only to be made subject to a good report from the inspector.(1)

By accepting the report(2) the Board laid down the principles on which it would pay its staff, and it accepted the principle of payment by results for head teachers. The principle of a limited progressive scale was also adopted for ex pupil-teachers but not for certificated assistants, although the Board had intimated the terms on which applications for an advance of salary would be entertained.

An unsuccessful attempt to review teachers' salaries was made in September 1880. However, the Revised Code of Regulations for the Guidance of Teachers, adopted in December 1880, contained several amendments to the salaries.(3)

The salaries of head teachers stated in 1878 were reaffirmed, except that the portion of the grant received under article 32(B) was to be reduced, if the grant itself was, and head teachers were to receive only half of the grant under article 19(E). Ex pupil-teachers were listed as receiving £60 (male) and £45 (female), with no increase for length of service. The scale for untrained certificated assistants was as follows:(4)

- 
1. 1878 Code also added 12 months service as a requirement before salary increase would be entertained.
  2. Adopted and stated in Code of Regulations for Guidance of Teachers 1878. Code also recognised Trained Certificated Assistants, i.e. those who had attended Training College, Salaries: Male £90 - Female £75.
  3. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.307.
  4. In 1880 the national average salary of male certificated teachers was £121 p.a. and of females £73 p.a. Smith: 'A History of English Elementary Education 1760- 1902, P.300.

3rd Division	Male	£60	Female	£50
2nd Division	Male	£65	Female	£52-10
1st Division	Male	£70	Female	£55

At the discretion of the Board, male trained certificated assistants were paid £80 and females £65, if serving in a girls or mixed department, or £60, if serving in an infants' department.

It may be noted that the 1880 scales for assistant teachers were lower than those established in 1878.

A new point mentioned in 1880 was that the drawing grant, less £1 for expenses incurred in holding the examination, was to be apportioned by the managers amongst the actual teachers of drawing.(1)

The 1878 and 1880 Regulations also said that in deciding salary increases, the Board would take into consideration whether the teacher was qualified in drill and music, if teaching in a boys' department, or in music only, if teaching in a girls' or infants' department.

No further conditions were laid down until April 1887, when the conditions in the Regulations were re-affirmed by the School Management Committee, which also said that applications for salary increases would only be accepted in October.(2)

- 
1. In June 1875 Board had resolved that drawing grant should be paid to actual teachers who had earned it. S.B.M. Vol.B, P.185. Detailed regulations had been approved in August 1879. S.B.M. Vol.D, P.18.
  2. S.B.M. Vol.G, P.265.

The committee also said that where a teacher was promoted to a position for which a higher salary had been paid to the preceding teacher, it should be considered an exception to the rule; the salary in each case being settled at the time of appointment.

Further regulations were introduced, in November 1887, for the division of drawing grants. The changes were radical as the assistants' share was to be gradually included in their fixed salary.

The regulations were:

- "(a) That the principal teacher shall share as at present, viz, a fixed payment (averaged) on 3 years + 10% of the actual grant. As new appointments are made this will be altered as the Board consider best.
- (b) All assistants, who have previously shared in the grant, shall receive the average of 2 or 3 years, as the case may be, and as the assistants remove this payment shall be included in the fixed salary.
- (c) Although new assistants will not share as provided in paragraph (b), yet, to mark appreciation of the full drawing certificate such assistants shall receive a special payment of £2 after the annual drawing examination.
- (d) Mr. Melross (who has charge of drawing at the Pupil-Teacher Central Classes) to receive one tenth of the drawing grant." (1)

The question of fixed salary scales arose again in 1889. In November, the Management Committee recommended that a head teacher's salary should be £170, except in such cases as the Board may determine, to be increased by £10 after ten years, by a further £10 after 15 years service and by a final increment of £10, to a maximum of £200, after twenty years service.<sup>(1)</sup> The recommendations were referred back to the committee.

In December 1889, a more detailed set of proposals was submitted, covering the salaries of head and assistant teachers. Having received information from several towns, the Committee suggested that it was extremely desirable to adopt the principle of fixed salaries. The scales presented were in the main acceptable, but Miss Connell objected to the one for female teachers.<sup>(2)</sup> When put to the vote, the voting was equal, and, the chairman declining to give a casting vote, the report was struck out.

Consideration of fixed salaries was therefore delayed until March 1890,<sup>(3)</sup> when revised proposals, differing only in detail from the December proposals, were submitted.

The general principle was that for new appointments in Boys' and Girls' departments<sup>(4)</sup> all head teachers should, on

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.H, P.395.      2. IBID, P.416.

3. S.B.M. Vol.J, P.3-9.

4. Grant Street girls' excepted: salary to start £10 below max. to be reached over 2 years.

appointment, commence at £20 below the maximum salary and receive yearly increments of £5 to the maximum. Infants' departments were divided into three groups according to size:

- Groups 1 & 2 - Maximum to be reached by increments of £5 over 5 years.
- Group 3 - Maximum to be reached by increments of £5 over 2 years.

In addition, head teachers of the following departments were to receive £5 if their department was awarded an E in the annual examination:

<u>Boys</u>	<u>Girls</u>	<u>Infants</u>
Alexandra Road	Alexandra Road	Alexandra Road
Sunderland Road	Sunderland Road	Sunderland Road
Durham Road	Durham Road	Durham Road
Askew Road	Askew Road	Askew Road
Prior Street	Prior Street	Prior Street
Redheugh	Redheugh	Redheugh
Victoria Road	Victoria Road	Victoria Road
Oakwellgate	Oakwellgate	Oakwellgate
Sheriff Hill (Mixed)		Windmill Hills
Alex. Road Junior		
Prior Street Junior		

Head teachers of the following departments were to receive £3 for an E:

Grant Street Girls  
 Grant Street Infants  
 Ellison           "  
 Mount Pleasant   "  
 Low Fell           "  
 Pipewellgate      "  
 Wrekenton         "

---

The scale of salaries was to operate from 1 May 1890 for head teachers and from the 1 October for assistants. No increase in salary was to be made in the case of appointments made later than those dates in the preceding year. Assistant teachers with a full D were to receive £2 after the drawing examination in their own department. The salary of Assistants at the Higher Grade School was to be fixed by the Board, and it was to increase by 4 increments of £5 each. Finally, all advances in any grade were to be subject to a satisfactory report on efficiency and conduct.

The scales for head teachers were as follows:

BOYS DEPTS.	Present Salary Incl. Grant	Maximum Proposed	To be Increased By:			
			1st Yr	2nd Yr	3rd Yr	4th Yr
Alexandra Road	£234	£240	£6			
Durham Road	227	240	7	£6		
Sunderland Rd.	218	230	6	6		
Askew Road	206	210 *	7	7		
Victoria Road	190	210	5	5	£5	£5
Sheriff Hill	210	210				
Redheugh	205	210	5			
Prior Street	204	210	6			
Oakwellgate	202	210	5	3		
Prior St. Junior	162	165	3			
Alex. Rd. Junior	148	150	2			

\* Current incumbent: Maximum £220 on account of long service.

GIRLS' DEPTS	Present Salary Incl. Grant	Maximum Proposed	To be Increased By	
			1st Yr.	2nd Yr.
Alexandra Road	£135	£140 *	£20	
Sunderland Rd.	133	140	5	£2
Durham Road	130	140	5	5
Askew Road	123	130	2	5
Victoria Road	120	130	5	5
Redheugh	120	130	5	5
Prior Street	121	130	4	5
Oakwellgate	121	130	4	5
Grant Street	77	80	3	

\* Current Incumbent: Maximum to be £155 for long and faithful Service and High Scholastic Acquirements.

Infants Departments

GROUP I

SCHOOL	Present Salary Incl. Grant	Maximum Proposed	To be Increased By:		
			1st Yr	2nd Yr	3rd Yr
Alexandra Road	£119	£125	£6		
Sunderland Rd.	117	125	5	£3	
Askew Road	105	120	5	5	£5
Durham Road	115	125	5	5	

GROUP II

SCHOOL	Present Salary Incl. Grant	Maximum Proposed	To be Increased By		
			1st Yr.	2nd Yr.	3rd Yr.
Victoria	£ 94	£110	£6	£5	£5
Oakwellgate	105	110	5		
Prior Street	96	110	5	5	4
Redheugh	103	110	7		
Windmill Hills	88	100	6	6	

GROUP III

SCHOOL	Present Salary Incl. Grant	Maximum Proposed	To be Increased By
			1st Yr.
Ellison	£93	£95	£2
Sheriff Hill	85	85	
Low Fell	79	85	6
Pipewellgate	83	85	2
Mount Pleasant	81	85	4
Grant Street	77	80	3
Wrekenton	77	80	3

The following scales were laid down for assistant teachers:

MALE

Trained Certificated Assistant - £70 + £5 x 6 to £100  
 Untrained " " - £65 + £5 x 3 to £ 80  
 Ex Pupil-Teachers - £50 + £2/10 x 4 to £ 60

---

FEMALE

Trained Certificated Assistant	- £60 + £5	x 4	to £80
Untrained " "	- £50 + £5	x 3	to £65
Ex Pupil Teachers	- £35 + £2/10	x 4	to £45

The above proposals were accepted by the Board on 12 March 1890<sup>(1)</sup> and remained in force until 1894.

At the end of 1893, the School Management Committee again considered the question of head teachers' salaries, and in January 1894<sup>(2)</sup> recommended that schools should be divided into groups, according to the accommodation provided, and that salaries should be paid according to the group.

The proposed scales effected a reduction of salary for certain posts, although no reduction was to be made until a vacancy occurred. New schools were to be considered by the Management Committee, and the salary was to be fixed by the Committee, until the attendance reached its normal figure, when the school would be placed in its normal group. If the average attendance was 15% above the authorised limit a special payment of £10 was to be made. In all cases the maximum was to be reached by yearly increments of £5, and head teachers, whose schools obtained a full grant, were to receive a bonus.

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.J, P.11.
  2. S.B.M. Vol.L, P.145-146.

The scales were as follows:

MASTERS

Class A Minimum £210 rising by £5 yearly to £230

" B " £200 " " " " " £220

" C " £190 " " " " " £210

" D " £150 " " " " " £170

Class A - Schools Accommodating 350 and Above

<u>School</u>	<u>Accm.</u>	<u>Average</u>	<u>Present Max.</u>	<u>Proposed Max.</u>	<u>Bonus</u>
Alexandra Road	383	368	£240	£230	£5
Sunderland Road	350	334	230	230	5
Durham Road	342	398	240	230	5
Sheriff Hill	350	380	230	230	5
Victoria	360	340	210	230	5

Class B - 300-349

Prior Street	300	350	230	220	5
Oakwellgate(1)	289	292	210	220	5

Class C - 250-299

Askew Road	247	272	220	210	5
Redheugh	250	297	210	210	5
Windmill Hills	260	278	150	210	5

Class D - Junior Mixed School

Prior St. Junr.	416	342	165	170	5
-----------------	-----	-----	-----	-----	---

- 
1. No reason is given for inclusion of Oakwellgate in Class B instead of Class C.

MISTRESSES (GIRLS)

Class A Minimum £120 rising by £5 yearly to £140

" B " £110 " " " " " £130

" C " £100 " " " " " £120

" D " £ 75 " " " " " £ 90

Class A - Schools Accommodating 350 and Above

<u>School</u>	<u>Accm.</u>	<u>Average</u>	<u>Present Max.</u>	<u>Proposed Max.</u>	<u>Bonus</u>
Alexandra Road	383	343	£155	£140	£5
Sunderland Road	350	294	140	140	5
Victoria Road	360	334	130	140	5

Class B - 300-349

Prior Street 327 290 130 130 5

Class C - 200-299

Durham Road	257	330	140	120	5
Redheugh	250	208	130	120	5
Oakwellgate	258	279	130	120	5
Askew Road	247	231	130	120	5
Windmill Hills	240	218	100	120	5

Class D - Small School

Grant Street 100 108 85 90 3

MISTRESSES (INFANTS)

Class A Minimum £100 rising by £5 yearly to £120

" B " £ 90 " " " " " £110

" C " £ 80 " " " " " £100

" D " £ 70 " " " " " £ 90

" E " £ 70 " " " " " £ 80

Class A - School Accommodating 350 and Above

<u>School</u>	<u>Accm.</u>	<u>Average</u>	<u>Present Max.</u>	<u>Proposed Max.</u>	<u>Bonus</u>
Alexandra Road	355	370	£125	£120	£5
Sunderland Rd.	350	364	125	120	5
Askew Road	343	360	120	120	5

Class B - 250-349

Redheugh	300	318	120	120	5
Victoria	300	234	110	110	5
Prior Street	298	215	110	110	5
Durham Road	311	335	125	110	5
Oakwellgate	262	261	110	110	5

Class C - 160-249

Windmill Hills	201	215	100	100	5
Ellison	161	179	100	100	5

Class D - 130-159

Sheriff Hill	150	143	85	90	3
Low Fell	150	135	85	90	3
Mount Pleasant	152	168	85	90	3

Class E - Below 130

Pipewellgate	120	103	85	80	3
Grant Street	100	86	80	80	3
Wrekenton	120	135	80	80	3

The new scales were accepted by the Board on 10 January 1894.(1)

Bonus payments were gradually withdrawn after the Board resolved, in 1897, to discontinue them for new appointments.(2)

No adjustment was made in 1894 to the scales of salary for assistant teachers, but they were revised in October 1898, when

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.L, P.147.
  2. S.B.M. Vol.N, P.272.

the following scales became operative.(1)

GRADE	PRESENT SCALE				NEW SCALE			
	MEN		WOMEN		MEN		WOMEN	
	Min.	Max.	Min.	Max.	Min.	Max.	Min.	Max.
Trained & Qual. to instruct P/Ts	£70	£120	£60	£80	£80	£120	£65	£80
Trained	70	120	60	80	75	120	60	80
Untrained	65	90	50	70	70	110	60	75
Ex P/Ts 1st & 2nd Class	50	60	35	45	50	60	40	45
Ex P/Ts 3rd Class	-	-	-	-	-	-	30	40
In mixed schools £5 or £10 to be paid to the Mistress in charge of Needlework.								

The sub committee, which had just recommended the above scales, was further empowered to reconsider the salaries of head-teachers.(2)

After much deliberation it reported in March 1899.(3)  
The new scales, approved by the Board, only applied to appointments made as from 1 March 1899. Increments remained £5 p.a. payable after twelve months completed service. One new recommendation was that if the average attendance exceeded 400, in a boys' department, or 360, in a girls' or infants' department, then, subject to a satisfactory Annual Report, an extra payment of £10 to the head

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.0, P.222.
  2. IBID.
  3. IBID, P.385.

teacher could be authorised. The Board also stated that it reserved the right to reclassify a school, or divide a mixed school if, in its opinion, such steps were necessary.

The 1899 scales for head teachers were:

MASTERS

Class	School	Accm	Aver 1898	OLD SCALE		NEW SCALE	
				Min.	Max.	Min.	Max.
A	H.G.S. Intermediate	700	501	£210	£230	£180	£240
	Low Fell	880	483	"	"	"	"
B	Brighton Avenue	436	427	"	"	"	£230
	Alexandra Road	383	342	"	"	"	"
	Shipcote	360	356	"	"	"	"
	Sunderland Road	350	353	"	"	"	"
	South Street	342	264	"	"	"	"
C	Prior Street	300	242	£200	£220	"	£220
	Sheriff Hill	300	276	"	"	"	"
D	Oakwellgate	289	223	£190	£210	"	£210
	Windmill Hills	260	215	"	"	"	"
	Redheugh	250	278	"	"	"	"
	Askew Road	247	284	"	"	"	"
E	Prior St. Junior	416	352	£150	£170	£150	£170

## MISTRESSES (GIRLS)

Class	School	Accm	Aver 1898	OLD SCALE		NEW SCALE	
				Min.	Max.	Min.	Max.
A	Brighton Avenue	416	427	£120	£140	£110	£130
	Alexandra Road	383	324	"	"	"	"
	Shipcote	360	278	"	"	"	"
	Victoria	360	367	"	"	"	"
	Sunderland Road	350	293	"	"	"	"
	Prior Street	327	283	"	£130	"	"
	South Street	297	292	£100	£120	"	"
B	Askew Road	247	251	"	"	"	£120
	Oakwellgate	240	226	"	"	"	"
	Redheugh	250	237	"	"	"	"
	Windmill Hills	240	227	"	"	"	"
	Rose St. Junior	456	354	"	"	"	"
C	Grant St. Junior	200	232	£ 75	£ 90	£ 80	£100
	Nun's Lane Junior	240	-	-	-	"	"

## MISTRESSES (INFANTS)

Class	School	Accm.	Aver 1898	OLD SCALE		NEW SCALE	
				Min.	Max.	Min.	Max.
A	Brighton Avenue	423	407	£100	£120	£100	£120
	Alexandra Road	355	385	"	"	"	"
	Sunderland Road	380	354	"	"	"	"
	Shipcote	300	288	£ 90	£110	"	"
	Redheugh	300	299	"	"	"	"
	Victoria	300	302	"	"	"	"
	South Street	311	293	"	"	"	"
	Prior Street	298	240	"	"	"	"
	Oakwellgate	262	250	"	"	"	"
Askew Road	343	335	"	"	"	"	
B	Nun's Lane	230	168	-	-	£ 80	£100
	Rochester St. (Temp)	-	282	£ 80	£100	"	"
	Windmill Hills	201	181	"	"	"	"
C	Low Fell	150	145	£ 70	£ 90	£ 70	£ 90
	Sheriff Hill	150	154	"	"	"	"
D	Wrekenton	120	152	"	£ 80	"	£ 80
	Pipewellgate	130	112	"	"	"	"

In March 1899, the sub committee also recommended the following scales for assistants at the Higher Grade Organised Science School. The important scale is Class A, as this was the first occasion that the Board recognised, for salary purposes, the additional qualifications required to teach subjects from the Science and Art Department Directory:

Class A - Assistant-teachers who in addition to the Education Department's certificate have qualified themselves for and are engaged in teaching further Advanced Science, Art, and Language:

Men - £100 - £130

Women - £ 90 - £110

Class B - Assistant-teachers engaged in teaching subjects covered by the usual certificate of the Education Department:

Men - £ 90 - £130

Women - £ 75 - £110

These scales remained in force for the remainder of the School Board's life, although, in February 1901(1) a deputation, from the Gateshead Teacher's Association, informed the Board that it felt that the salaries of assistant teachers compared unfavour-

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.P, P.557.

ably with those given by other school boards. In October 1901<sup>(1)</sup> assistant teachers were granted a special increment for long service:

Over Three years service on maximum:

Certificated Assistants	£10
Ex Pupil-Teachers	£ 5

The Board was aware, in its closing years, that the salaries needed revising and recommended to the new Education Authority that one of its first tasks should be a complete overhaul of the system.<sup>(2)</sup>

A final point of interest is that in February 1901<sup>(3)</sup> there was a crisis over the payment of the teachers' salaries. The Board's Treasurer, Mr. Ash, intimated to the Finance Committee that because the Board had a considerable debit balance the Bank's directors had issued instructions which prevented him from honouring the Board's cheques for payment of the salaries, without some form of security.

The Finance Committee was extremely surprised at the intimation and at the very brief notice which had been given, but the deeds of the site of the new Kelvin Grove school were lodged with the Bank and the crisis averted.<sup>(4)</sup>

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.Q, P.227.
  2. Ncle Daily Leader 28.5.1903.
  3. S.B.M. Vol.P, P.561-563.
  4. IBID.

The Finance Committee pursued the matter. It reported to the Board that the Board's finances were sound; that no similar request had ever been made before and that the action by the Bank, where the account had been lodged for over thirty years, was deeply resented by the Board. The Finance Committee was then empowered to consider what should be done.(1)

In March,(2) the committee recommended that teachers' salaries should be paid earlier in the month, but the most important result of the crisis was that in June 1901(3) the Board's Account was transferred from the Gateshead Branch of the National Provincial Bank to the firm of Hodgkin, Barnet, Spence, Pease and Co. Bankers, in Newcastle.

#### Conditions of Service

The Code of Regulations for the Guidance of Teachers, first published in 1878,(4) contained articles governing the appointment and employment of teachers.

"Article 2. "All Certificated and Assistant Teachers are appointed by resolution of the Board subject, however, as a general rule, to the recommendation of the Managers.

" 3. All Assistant Teachers may, at the discretion of the Board be transferred from one school to another.

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.P.561-563.

2. IBID, P.589.

3. S.B.M. Vol.Q, P.93.

4. Revised editions were published in 1880 & 1892.

Article 4. In the case of Head Teachers the engagement shall be terminable by three months notice, on either side, and in the case of Assistant Teachers by six weeks' notice.(1) In the case of Pupil-Teachers six months' notice will be required and in the case of monitors one week's notice.

Article 20 laid down that school hours should be from 9 a.m. to 12 noon and 1.30 to 4 p.m. except in infants' schools which could close at 3.30 p.m. Other articles also laid down regulations for the carrying out of religious observance and instruction, the marking of registers and all matters affecting the conduct of the schools.

The application of these regulations by the Board was fair. Vacancies were usually advertised and appointments made by the Board after the Managers had produced a short list; occasionally, notice of vacancies was limited to teachers serving in the Board's own schools. Canvassing was prohibited.(2)

The right to transfer was frequently used by the Board, often when a school needed an additional teacher, but also as a means of economy, when teachers were transferred rather than declare them redundant.(3) Occasionally transfers were made for personal reasons. Two examples are pertinent as they

- 
1. Reduced to 4 weeks in 1880 Regulations.
  2. June 1879 S.B.M. Vol.C, P.496.
  3. e.g. May 1890, S.B.M. Vol.J, P.49.

demonstrate the Board's concern for the welfare of its staff.

In June 1889, Miss Vickers, serving in Redheugh infants' school, was transferred to one nearer her home, as she was "too delicate to travel a long distance".<sup>(1)</sup> The second instance occurred in 1893~~1893~~ when Mr. Melross, the headmaster of Sheriff Hill school, who was in poor health and who was teaching in an overcrowded school, was transferred to the headship of Victoria Road.<sup>(2)</sup>

Dismissals of staff occasionally occurred for educational and disciplinary reasons. For instance, in June 1889, Miss Lucas (Redheugh infants') was dismissed, the management stating "she will not make a teacher."<sup>(3)</sup> However the Board did not act precipitately. At the same meeting a letter was sent to Miss Woodward (Prior Street girls') telling her "to show increased effort if she is to be retained in the service of the Board."<sup>(4)</sup>

Usually teachers resigning were held to the terms of their notice, for example Miss Keddie in December 1875<sup>(5)</sup>, but, if the teacher had been declared redundant then the required period of notice was often extended, but could be waived if he obtained another post before it expired.<sup>(6)</sup>

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.H, P.305.    2. S.B.M. Vol.K, P.471.  
 3. S.B.M. Vol.H, P.305.    4. IBID, P.304.  
 5. S.B.M. Vol.B, P.238.    6. S.B.M. Vol.K, P.139.

In general, relations between the Board and its staff were harmonious, but one instance of disharmony is worth recording.

In January 1878, Miss Nicholson, headmistress of Alexandra Road girls, tendered her resignation from 31 March, because she had been repeatedly called to account for her supposed mismanagement of the school by Mr. S. Thompson, one of the managers.(1)

The Board proposed to accept the resignation, an amendment to hold it while a study was made of the rules of management, being defeated. Mr. Thompson voted against the amendment and for the motion.(2) It would have been better had he abstained.

On 23 January,(3) Miss Nicholson again wrote to the Board explaining that her resignation had only been conditional. She requested an investigation of the circumstances and said that if they improved she could, and would, continue in the post. The circumstances referred to were Mr. Thompson's alleged interference with the routine and work of the school.(4) Examples she cited were: his complaint about crumbs on the headmistress' desk; his questioning of the practice of allowing children to

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.159. 2. IBID P.160.

3. IBID, P.184-189.

4. Miss Nicholson's complaints are supported by the records of other head teachers. The Log Books of Prior Street Boys' and Girls' schools both contain numerous references to visits by Mr. Thompson and imply meddling and officiousness on his part.

eat their dinners on the school premises; his complaints about the ventilation, of dripping taps, of too little or too much soap in the cloakrooms; his removal of teachers from their classes and his criticism of Miss Nicholson in front of junior staff.

A committee met on 29 January to consider the case and decreed that Mr. Thompson's actions were not necessarily interference. Miss Nicholson, it stated, should have voiced her complaints to the managers as they arose and complaints against teachers, by a Manager, should be laid before the Managers. Miss Nicholson's resignation was then rescinded and a copy of the Board's decision sent to her for insertion in the school log book.<sup>(1)</sup> Obviously Miss Nicholson was not satisfied as, on 12 June, another headmistress was appointed to the school.

The important result was that, in February 1878, the Board decided unanimously to examine the rules of Managers and to draw up a Code of Regulations for the Guidance of Teachers.

The Code of Regulations covered all aspects of a teacher's employment, and laid down rules for the organisation of the schools including; school hours and holidays, fees to be charged, the need to observe the time table, and corporal

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.204-205.

punishment. A copy was issued to each teacher.(1) Revised regulations, accepted in 1892, included the above points and added rules for the enforcement of attendance, the letting of schoolrooms, and instructions to caretakers.(2)

It was common practice in the late nineteenth century for serving teachers to seek certificated status by studying for and sitting the certificate examination. Numerous Gateshead teachers qualified in this way, as the following table shows:

(3)

Year	No. Passing Certificate Examination	
1886	8	
	1st Year	2nd Year
1894	5	14
1895	9	4
1896	6	13
1899	10	10
1900	?	11
1901	10	13

Assistant teachers in the Board's service, of whom the majority were time expired pupil teachers, also went to training college. After the establishment of the Day Training College in Newcastle in 1890, several Gateshead teachers studied there, although the only direct evidence is that in 1892 five teachers

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.202.
  2. S.B.M. Vol.K, P.165.
  3. Compiled from Minutes.

were admitted to it.(1) Gateshead teachers also gained degrees. Mr. Lewins, an assistant at the Higher Grade School, gained an external B.Sc. degree and Mr. Richard Wilson of Brighton Avenue obtained a B.A. degree.(2) On obtaining his degree, Mr. Wilson was recognised as a trained certificated teacher and paid according to the scale. At the same time the Board decided:

"That in other cases where teachers may obtain University or other distinctions, each case be treated on its own merits having regard to practical success, experience, etc." (3)

In other words, possession of a degree or similar qualification would not of itself obtain trained status for the holder.

Apart from the study undertaken by individual teachers, the Board itself tried to improve the quality of its staff by providing courses for them, or allowing them leave of absence to undertake further training.

In 1882, a course in Music was arranged for teachers.(4) In November 1886, a course in musical drill was organised.(5) In 1890, a dressmaking course was held for evening class teachers.(6) In 1892, a course in manual instruction was held, on Saturday mornings, which 28 teachers attended,(7) In 1900 a Voice Production and Training course was specially arranged(8) and in

- 
- |                         |                         |
|-------------------------|-------------------------|
| 1. S.B.M. Vol.K, P.264. | 2. S.B.M. Vol.M, P.257. |
| 3. IBID, P.310.         | 4. S.B.M. Vol.E, P.181. |
| 5. S.B.M. Vol.G, P.184. | 6. S.B.M. Vol.J, P.164. |
| 7. S.B.M. Vol.K, P.267. | 8. S.B.M. Vol.P, P.229. |

1902 a Teachers' Certificate class was mentioned.(1)

The Board allowed Mr. Onions to attend a technical instruction course in Germany in 1891,(2) and in the same year Mr. Denton was granted leave of absence to attend a three week course of Sloyd training.(3)

The most interesting opportunity for further study given to Gateshead teachers was the decision of the Town Council to give a grant from the Excise Money to the Durham College of Science, on condition that Gateshead teachers were able to attend a course of instruction there. The course was arranged on Saturday mornings and began in 1892. Eighty teachers attended.(4) It became an annual event, and later other courses at Rutherford College, Newcastle, were arranged in the same way. Presumably it was at these courses that some teachers obtained the science qualifications, necessary to teach subjects, listed in the Science and Art Department Directory.

The teachers did not always observe the Code of Regulations. For example, in March 1879, the Clerk reported several irregularities which he had noticed while visiting the schools. After consultation with the School Management Committee he wrote to all head teachers pointing out:

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.Q, P.573.
  2. S.B.M. Vol.J, P.335.
  3. IBID, P.266.
  4. S.B.M. Vol.K, P.267.

"that the Board has ascertained, with much regret, the existence of grave irregularities on the part of certain teachers in their disregard for the Regulations and the timetables. They have learned that not only are some teachers late in their attendance and irregular in marking the register, but, also that the provision of religious instruction has been disregarded .....

"The Board regrets to be thus compelled to recall the attention of teachers to the Code of Regulations which has been issued for their observance. This Code and the timetables must, in future, be followed carefully. Any deviation will be visited with the grave displeasure of the Board."(1)

In May 1886, head teachers had to be reminded that they should personally conduct the religious observances.(2)

In cases of sickness the Board's early policy was to pay a teacher who was absent at least for an extended period. In 1875, a Miss Innerd was seriously ill. Her salary was paid for three months, then suspended, but she was informed that her services would be required when she recovered.(3) In 1888, Thomas Black, a pupil teacher, received similar treatment.(4) In 1885, however, it was decided to discontinue the practice of paying salaries during absence, the Board "reserving to itself the right to deal with exceptional cases."(5)

The case of Miss Tindale of Durham Road school, in 1893, must have been exceptional. When she was absent through illness, a temporary teacher was appointed to fill the vacancy

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.439.
  2. S.B.M. Vol.G, P.61, Also in Feb.1898 SBM Vol.O, P.6.
  3. S.B.M. Vol.B, P.246.
  4. S.B.M. Vol.H, P.26.
  5. S.B.M. Vol.F, P.291.

and £4 per month was deducted from Miss Tindale's salary.(1)

In 1898 a new regulation was made whereby a teacher absent for more than two weeks would receive only half the stipulated salary "unless at a Board meeting a definite resolution is adopted ordering the salary to be paid in full."(2)

From the preceding chapter, it can be seen that in all its dealings with its staff the Board was reasonable and fair. It laid down regulations for the guidance of its teachers, paid reasonable salaries; provided opportunities for study and training and according to the lights of the time, took an interest in the welfare of its employees. Perhaps the best testimony to the Board, as an employer, is the fact that three of the earliest teachers appointed, Mr. Bowler, Mr. Yeaman and Mr. Elliott, were still serving the Board nearly thirty years later, in 1902, and the best testimony to the work of the teachers is undoubtedly the high standard of attainment reached in the Gateshead Board Schools.

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.L, P.119.
  2. S.B.M. Vol.O, P.131.

## CHAPTER XI

### Pupil Teachers

#### The Development of the System<sup>(1)</sup>

The pupil teacher system was introduced by Kay-Shuttleworth in 1846, to replace the monitorial system, popularised by Bell and Lancaster, in an attempt to improve the standard of instruction in public elementary schools and to provide a better quality student for the newly established training colleges. Pupil teachers, drawn if possible from the more able pupils, were to be 'apprenticed' for 5 years from 13-18 to a headteacher, who was to receive £3 p.a. for each pupil-teacher instructed for  $7\frac{1}{2}$  hours per week. The ratio of pupil-teachers was fixed at 1:25 scholars in average attendance. In addition to the instruction received, each pupil-teacher was required to teach in the school, where he was apprenticed, for which he was paid £10 p.a. rising by increments of £2.10 (subject to satisfactory progress) to £20.

The system achieved its objects; the instruction in schools, practising the pupil-teacher system, did improve and the flow and quality of students entering training college did increase. However, abuses crept into the system and during the 1860's slight modifications were made: the ratio of pupil-teachers was reduced to 1:40 scholars in average attendance,

---

1. Adapted from Lance Jones "The Training of Teachers in England and Wales" Chapter 1. P.18-23.

small schools were not allowed to employ pupil-teachers, as their instruction could not be efficient and no more than four pupil-teachers were permitted for one teacher.

The next important development was the establishment of Central Classes for pupil-teachers by the London School Board, in 1882, after a long struggle with the Education Department. Other school boards, including Gateshead, soon adopted the system. In outline pupil-teachers<sup>(1)</sup> were to be taught in a centre, for two hours on each of two evenings a week and for three and a half hours on Saturday morning, by certificated teachers.<sup>(2)</sup> As the Central class system developed, evening classes were abolished, the principle of daytime instruction was introduced and pupil-teacher centres began to approximate the secondary schools; the change was made possible by reducing the teaching hours to 15.

This in essence was the system as it was organised and developed up to 1902 and, as will be seen from the following sections, the training of pupil-teachers in Gateshead conformed closely to the national pattern.

- 
1. Apprenticeship began at 14. The year from 13-14 was a probationary year and candidates were not to be employed more than half-time.
  2. P/T's teaching time at the same time were reduced to 25 hours per week.

The Recruitment of Pupil-Teachers in Gateshead and Conditions of Service.

There is evidence that as late as 1857-58 the pupil-teacher system was not practised in Gateshead schools, in receipt of Parliamentary grant. In that year the Rev. G.R. Moncreiff wrote, when assessing the relative merits of the monitorial and pupil-teacher systems:

"My reverend friend (The Rector of Gateshead) summons me, however, as a witness, to prove that his schools without pupil-teachers are as efficient as other schools which have them." (1)

Doubtless the pupil-teacher system was established in the following decade, but bearing in mind the serious effect, nationally, of the 1866 Code on the pupil-teacher system, it is possible that it was not firmly established in Gateshead in 1870.

The first pupil-teachers for Board Schools were recruited as a result of advertisements in the local press, but from the beginning there was greater difficulty in obtaining a supply of suitable applicants. For High Level Road School, advertisements were placed in May 1872. No replies were received and it was not until 11 June 1873, six months after the school opened, that two pupil teachers were appointed; one of them was soon dismissed. (2) An advertisement for a female pupil-teacher

- 
1. C. of C. on Ed. Report 1857-58. Rev. G.R. Moncreiff's Report Appendix C, P.486.
  2. Thomas R. Chatt for laziness, S.B.M. Vol.B, P.51.

in September 1873 also attracted no applicants. At Prior Street school, similar difficulty was also experienced; the main staff were appointed in May 1874 and the school opened on the 7th September, but it was not until the 14 October that the first pupil-teachers were appointed. Four male and four female pupil-teachers were required. Only two male applicants were forthcoming.<sup>(1)</sup> Three female pupil-teachers were also appointed and, in the absence of further male applicants, another three females were appointed in November.

This problem of recruitment was not peculiar to Gateshead. H.E. Oakley Esq., H.M.I. for County Durham said in his report in 1876<sup>(2)</sup> that there was considerable difficulty in recruiting suitable candidates, particularly boys. He pointed out that many youths did not look to the future and refused to become pupil teachers, preferring the immediate prospects of earning 12/- per week as a clerk, while girls preferred a life of ease at home. Mr. Oakley also recommended that pupil-teachers should have one or two afternoons a week for study. Here perhaps was pinpointed one of the factors deterring potential applicants; the onerous nature of the job.

- 
1. Henry Percy Irving & William Wilkinson (the latter transferred from H.L. Road School. After Chatt and Wilkinson left they were replaced by two assistant masters. S.B.M. Vol.B, P.106.
  2. C. of C. on Ed. Report 1876-77, P.520.

It is not surprising that school boards had initial difficulties in obtaining pupil teachers. The expansion of elementary education in the early 1870's produced a demand which could not be met from the small number of suitable candidates available, and it is reasonable to expect the problem to remain until board schools began to produce their own candidates in appreciable numbers. What is surprising is that the problem was perennial, at least until the end of the 1880's.

In 1882 the Board stated:

"the (School Management) Committee still continue to experience great difficulty in securing an ample supply of properly qualified male pupil-teachers. This is mainly owing to the numerous openings in these Northern towns for boys and partly to the idea that the market is overstocked with teachers."(1)

In 1885(2) the Board again commented on the same difficulty, although the salaries were liberal and had been newly increased.

Despite the reasons put forward, by the Board, at this stage for the shortage of candidates, there were perhaps more important reasons, inherent in the system itself which precluded qualified pupils from applying. These reasons could have been the salaries, the arduous nature of the duties and training and the possible insecurity which faced the pupil-teacher when his formal engagement ended.

- 
1. 3rd T.R. 1882, P.9.
  2. 4th T.R. 1885, P.10.

### Salaries

The first pupil-teachers in board schools were appointed, irrespective of sex, at a salary of £12.10 rising by annual increments of £2. 10 (subject to satisfactory progress) to £22. 10.(1) By 1878 the scale had changed, and it was changed again in 1880:

	<u>MALE</u>		<u>FEMALE</u>		(2)
	<u>1878</u>	<u>1880</u>	<u>1878</u>	<u>1880</u>	
Candidate	£10	£10	£ 8	£ 6	
1st Year	£15	£13	£12.10.	£ 8	
2nd Year	£17.10.	£17	£15	£12	
3rd Year	£20	£21	£17.10.	£16	
4th Year	£22.10.	£24	£20	£20	

At once one can see that although the scale for male pupil teachers had actually increased, relative to that of the early 1870's, the scale for females had actually decreased. It must be borne in mind, however, that the scales were proportionate to those in force for male and female certificated teachers and ex pupil-teachers.

In 1884, the Board discussed the obvious difficulties of recruiting male pupil teachers and introduced a new salary scale:(3)

- 
1. Appendix No.12.
  2. 1878 figures from Code of Regulations for Guidance of Teachers 1878  
1880 figures S.B.M. Vol.D, P.292.
  3. S.B.M. Vol.F, P.97.

Candidates	5/- per week	£13	p.a.
1st Year P/T	6/- per week	£15.12.0	p.a.
2nd Year P/T	8/- per week	£20.16.0	p.a.
3rd Year P/T	10/- per week	£26	p.a.
3th Year P/T	12/- per week	£31. 4.0	p.a.

The 1880 scale was retained for female pupil-teachers.

As from 1st May 1886<sup>(1)</sup> the scale was reduced to the 1880 scale, as an economy measure, although the supply of pupil teachers had not materially increased. As this salary review only mentioned newly engaged pupil-teachers it is assumed that the salaries of existing staff were not reduced.

By 1892 the scales were as follows:<sup>(2)</sup>

	<u>MALE</u>	<u>FEMALE</u>
Candidates	£10	£ 6
1st Year	£13	£ 8
2nd Year	£17	£12
3rd Year	£21	£16
4th Year	£24	£20

These scales remained unaltered until after 1902.

1. Cross Commission 1886 stated that the salaries of pupil teachers showed a marked decline. Lance Jones: 'The Training of Teachers' P.22.
2. Code of Regulations for Guidance of Teachers 1892. S.B.M. Vol.K, P.166.

In addition to his salary, the pupil teacher was usually given a share of the grant which he earned for the school. After the introduction of the central class system, he could earn a prize allotted, from the grants earned, to pupil teachers passing "well" in the annual examination.

In August 1876, it was decided that the grant earned by a pupil-teacher should be equally shared by him and the head-teacher who instructed him.(1) In 1882 a prize system was adopted for pupil-teachers at the Central Classes.(2) A mark "FAIR" at the Annual examination earned a prize of 10/- and a "GOOD" earned £1. This system was continued to June 1890 when the following system of reward was introduced because the system of grants was changed under the New Code.

Pupil-teachers obtaining a "GOOD" mark in the 1st, 2nd or 3rd years were awarded 10/-; those in the 4th year, who obtained a first class Queen's scholarship, £1.(3)

A final revision was made in 1891. The prizes were awarded on the aggregate of results in the Quarterly examinations, the annual examination by the H.M.I., the science examination and the Art examination. All the 4th year pupil teachers who obtained

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.B, P.337.
  2. S.B.M. Vol.E, P.16.
  3. S.B.M. Vol.J, P.97.

a first class scholarship were awarded £2 and those obtaining a second class, £1. 3rd year pupil-teachers who passed "WELL" received £1.

### Arduous Duties and Training

A second factor deterring many possible candidates from entering the teaching profession must have been the long hours of work and the arduous nature of the duties and training.

The first pupil teachers appointed were expected to teach full time, i.e. 30 hours per week and to receive 5 hours tuition before or after school hours.<sup>(1)</sup> If one adds time for preparation and homework, to the 35 hours already committed, then a very heavy programme resulted.

In 1876 H.E. Oakley Esq. commented<sup>(2)</sup> on the pressure of work under which pupil teachers laboured and suggested that they should have two afternoons per week free for study. As often happens there was an interval between comment and action; not until 1884 did the Board attempt to ease the burden. In June it decided that the pupil teacher's engagement should be strictly limited to 25 hours per week,<sup>(3)</sup> as provided in the Code, that 9 - 9.30 should be set aside for private study and that any deviation from the timetable, as regards the detention of a pupil teacher after 4 p.m.

- 
1. Appendix No.12.
  2. C of C on Ed. Report 1876, P.521.
  3. Yet in 1886 HMI's reports on Pipewellgate, Low Fell & Ellison schools reminded Board that P/T's should not be employed for more than 25 hours per week.

should be specially noted in the school log-book.(1)

The above proposals were reasonable and were intended to eliminate some of the malpractices which had crept into some schools, adding to the severity of the employment.

After the introduction of the central class system, the pupil teacher's time was fully organised. He had to teach a full day; to attend classes for two hours on Monday and Thursday evenings and for three and a half hours on Saturday mornings, and he had to receive scripture instruction from his own head teacher outside of normal school hours. In addition, female pupil-teachers were taught needlework, between 8 - 9 a.m. on Wednesdays, in their own schools.(2)

With such conditions prevailing(3) it is not surprising that many able pupils did not wish to become pupil teachers, or that many pupil teachers reacted strongly against the discipline and long hours.

In March 1888(4) further steps were taken, by the School Board, to lessen the pupil teacher's load. New regulations were made forbidding their detention in school after 4.45 p.m; stating that pupil teachers should not take home sewing to prepare for

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.F, P.97.
  2. See Appended Timetable.
  3. Appendix No.13.
  4. S.B.M. Vol.G, P.468.

their classes; and that, where possible, notes for class lessons should be prepared in school hours, because the Board was firmly of the opinion that the hours spent at school and at the central classes were more than enough for young people. The need for such regulations implies that those made in 1884 were honoured more in the breach than in the observance.

The really significant improvement in the pupil teacher's lot came in 1891(1) when the Board accepted the principle of "day release" classes for 1st and 2nd year pupil teachers; 3rd year pupil teachers were given a half day holiday in lieu of their evening class. No change was made for 4th year pupil teachers, but long hours for them were more reasonable as they were 17 years of age and would probably be entering a training college a year later. Saturday morning classes continued, but the greatest relief was the reduction of teaching hours to 15.

Thus, after twenty years, the pupil teacher system in the Board's schools had evolved into one which was fair in its demands. In essence it remained unchanged until after the passing of the 1902 Act and the abolition of school boards.

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.J, P.293.

### Insecurity of Tenure.

Engagement as a pupil teacher and the satisfactory completion of the apprenticeship did not automatically lead to a secure career in the teaching profession.

Certain pupil teachers were dismissed, from time to time for disciplinary or educational reasons, but in such cases the Board was only asserting its powers correctly. Our concern is not with such pupils, but with those whose services were dispensed with after successfully completing their contract.

In May 1878 the following general rules were made, regarding the employment of time-expired pupil teachers.

"A female pupil-teacher who purposes entering training college at the next ensuing Christmas may be retained at a salary of £35; male pupil teachers £40 - this rule to apply only to those who purpose entering college. Other cases to be dealt with according to the merits of the case." (1)

In September 1883 the special committee, which reported on the staffing of schools, said:

"Pupil teachers, on the successful completion of their engagement, may be retained for one month at the following salaries:

Viz: Males £45; Females £35.

and if appointed permanently, as ex pupil teachers, at such salaries as the Board may approve or they may

be retained to Christmas at a salary of £30 males; £25 females if they are going to training college" (1)

There is ample evidence that the effect of these resolutions was to make a large number of time expired pupil teachers redundant, if they did not obtain ex pupil teacher status or admission to training college.

In May 1884, after listing certain time expired pupil teachers who would be retained, the Board passed the following resolution:

"The committee regret they cannot find work for the remaining pupil teachers." (2)

In May 1886 the Board passed a similar resolution:

"That all pupil teachers, who have completed their engagement and declared the bona-fide intention to enter a training college at Christmas be retained at their present salaries.

"That all others be placed on the reserved list and the intimation given to them to discontinue their services." (3)

Similar motions were passed in June 1887 and May 1888 and in June 1889 only three out of twenty-three time-expired pupil teachers were retained; the others being placed on the "reserved list". (4) Again in 1890 all 26 time-expired pupil teachers were removed from the staff as from the 30th June. (5)

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.E, P.397.
  2. S.B.M. Vol.F, P.58.
  3. S.B.M. Vol.G, P.56.
  4. S.B.M. Vol.H, P.303.
  5. S.B.M. Vol.J, P.48.

From the foregoing examples, it can be seen that being a successful pupil teacher gave no guarantee of future employment and many time-expired pupil teachers were thrown on the labour market at 18, admittedly with a more advanced education, but at a disadvantage for apprenticeships or commercial training compared with their classmates who had left school at 14.

Naturally, the School Board could not be expected to absorb all its time-expired pupil teachers, as there were not enough vacancies in Board Schools, and there was a growing realisation that trained certificated teachers were superior to ex pupil teachers. Equally naturally, pupils would not wish to undertake an arduous four year engagement as a pupil teacher if, at the end of that time, they were to be dismissed by their employer with little prospect of employment elsewhere. Nor could it be said that lack of effort or ability prevented their acceptance for training college at a time when training college places were woefully short and when the majority of trainee teachers had to depend on scholarships to pay for their training. The situation was eased by the establishment of Day Training Colleges after 1890 and the shortage of teachers; there being no instances in 1890's of pupil teachers being dismissed as surplus to requirements.(1)

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.0, P.30. "Having regard to the difficulties in securing teachers, the committee recommends that every pupil teacher, who has passed the scholarship examinations and is willing to remain in the Board's service, be retained."

Although salaries and working conditions must have been contributory factors, it was the insecurity of a future career, inherent in the system, which required large number of pupil teachers and provided relatively few openings for them, that prevented suitable candidates, especially boys,<sup>(1)</sup> from coming forward in sufficient numbers.

Having considered the pupil teachers recruitment and conditions of service, under the School Board, it is now pertinent to look at their training in more detail.

### Pupil Teacher Training

When two pupil teachers were appointed to High Level Road, the Board's first temporary school, the responsibility for their training was laid on the headmaster; Mr. Bowler being told it was his duty to instruct the pupil teachers for six hours per week,<sup>(2)</sup> including one hour's religious knowledge, such instruction not to be in school hours or the lunch break.

It seems that at first the headmaster had to undertake the instruction as part of his normal duties, and the headmaster, or mistress, of each new school opened was expected to train his own pupil teachers.<sup>(3)</sup> However, it was not long before the

---

1. Relative Figures for Male & Female P/T's including candidates are as follows:

<u>Year</u>	<u>Male</u>	<u>Female</u>
1879	25	63
1886	23	88
1894	25	108
1897	25	97
1900	18	86

2. Presumably amended as P/T's contract stated 5 hrs per week. Appendix 1
3. Mr. Bowler requested extra payment for instructing P/T's - refused. Referred to terms of original contract.

instruction of pupil teachers was regarded as an additional duty, at least for salary purposes. In September 1875, Miss Davey of Sheriff Hill school was appointed, under article 7(c), to instruct pupil teachers for the sum of £2 p.a.(1) Another example occurred in 1877, when the headmaster of Sheriff Hill school was told to instruct the pupil teachers of the infant school for £3 p.a. per candidate,(2) in the previous example it is not stated whether the payment to Miss Davey was on a per capita basis or not.

The quality and quantity of instruction given to the early pupil teachers, although governed by the Code of Regulations, must have varied considerably depending as it did on the quality and conscience of individual head teachers. Some attempts were made to standardise the instruction, for example in August 1877 a class of pupil teachers was formed at the cookery school on a Friday evening;(3) in September 1877 the Board recommended that "Pinnock's Analysis of the Old and New Testaments" should be adopted as the text book for "such pupil teachers as may desire it"(4) and in August 1878 it was decided that:

"Having regard to the appointment of pupil teachers at various schools and in consequence of somewhat uneven standard of examination under the present system, it is necessary for the Clerk to hold an examination, quarterly or as required, and that the

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.B, P.206.
  2. S.B.M. Vol.B, P.402.
  3. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.66.
  4. IBID P.76. Some evidence of books used by early P/T's is available in school log books. They included Education and the State: Macaulay; and Chatham and the American War. Poetry included Selections from Paradise Lost; Selections from Aytoun Lays of the Last Minstrel and Bingen on the Rhine. Prior St. Log Books.

examination should be open to the scholars of all schools within the borough." (1)

No evidence of the examinations being held is available, but there is further evidence of the unsatisfactory training of pupil teachers. In June 1882 the School Management Committee informed the Board that:

"The Managers (of Redheugh School) are of the opinion from the evidence brought before them, that the irregular manner in which the instruction has been given to pupil teachers has not conducted to their satisfactory progress." (2)

The most conclusive evidence, however, is the Board's statement after the introduction of the Central Class system:

"the instruction of pupil teachers under the old system was far from satisfactory." (3)

The rationalisation of pupil teacher training began with the appointment of the Rev. W. Moore Ede<sup>(4)</sup> to the School Board in September 1881.

Soon after his arrival, the Rev. Moore Ede introduced a motion, in January 1882,<sup>(5)</sup> to establish a committee to enquire into the operation of the central class system and to report whether it would be expedient in Gateshead.

The Board's agreement was unanimous. The Committee reported favourably and regulations, for the collective instruction of pupil teachers, were drawn up in February 1882.<sup>(6)</sup> Preparations

- 
1. Presumably included Voluntary Schools. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.310.
  2. S.B.M. Vol.E, P.111.
  3. 3rd T.R. 1882, P.9.
  4. Succeeded Archdeacon Prest as Rector of Gateshead and took his place on the School Board.
  5. S.B.M. Vol.E, P.3.
  6. IBID, P.16.

were later completed for the classes to commence on 27 July.

The central classes were held in Alexandra Road school on Monday and Thursday evenings from 6 - 8 p.m. and on Saturday mornings from 9 - 12.15 p.m. Instruction was given, in those subjects set out in the pupil teachers schedule, by selected teachers; special teachers were engaged for special subjects such as languages and science. Pupil teachers still received scripture instruction from their respective head teachers and female pupil teachers were taught needlework in their own school from 8 - 9 a.m. on Wednesday mornings. For instruction first and second year pupil teachers were grouped in one class and third and fourth year students in another.(1)

Regular and punctual attendance was required and pupil teachers had to sit a quarterly examination, the results of which were laid before the Board. Provision was made for payments of prizes to pupil teachers on the results of these examinations.

Payments currently made to head teachers for instructing pupil teachers were discontinued and 3/- per hour paid to each teacher engaged for duty at the central classes.(2) All the grants earned from the Science and Art Department were paid into the general fund of the Board, not to individual teachers.

- 
1. In practice only combined on a Saturday, see Timetable Appendix.
  2. Pupil teachers at Wrekenton, Low Fell and Sheriff Hill schools continued to be taught by own head teachers, because of distance involved.

Pupil teachers from Voluntary Schools<sup>(1)</sup> and teachers in voluntary schools were eligible for instruction at, or appointment as teachers at, the central classes.

E.J. Harding Esq., Clerk to the School Board, was appointed to superintend the classes and to be responsible, to the Board, for their efficient running.

When the classes opened, in July 1882, the Board recommended the following list of books for use by students, regard having been given to those books already in use:<sup>(2)</sup>

Grammar	Senior	Morell's Grammar
	Junior	Alcock's Grammar
Geography		Cornwall's
Art	Senior	Keith John's
Arithmetic		Bernard Smith's
		Colenso's
History		Students' Hume
	Senior	Collier's
	Junior	Edith Thompson's
Music		Hullah's Manual
French		Doctor Alm's First Tutor
	<u>OR</u>	Stewart's French
Latin		Dr. Smith's Principia Latina
Domestic Economy	Senior	Tegilmeir's
Euclid		Todhunter's Edition
Algebra		Todhunter's Edition

At the same time the Board stipulated that all the text books should be purchased by the pupil teachers,<sup>(3)</sup> but said that any text books, currently the property of the Board, could be sold

- 
1. The only evidence of pupil teachers from Voluntary schools attending the classes occurs in the late 1890's. Two resolutions (SBM Vol.N, P.380 and SBM Vol.P, P.132) were made about charges for P/T's from Voluntary Schools attending central classes. Also Board stated: "It is pleasing to know that P/T's from several Voluntary Schools receive their instruction in these classes." 9th T.R. 1900, P.17.
  2. S.B.M. Vol.E, P.130-131.
  3. Rule 11, Code of Regulations for Guidance of Teachers 22 Dec.1880.

at half price or less, if they were suitable.

To supervise the classes, the Board set up a small sub-committee of the School Management Committee, thereby rescinding the appointment of the Clerk as superintendent. This was in accordance with the Board's policy, which had evolved over the years, of not leaving the management of its schools in the hands of permanent officials.(1)

Obviously the central class system, like any new enterprise, had its teething troubles, and by the end of 1882 several alterations were made to the scheme. In December, the large class of candidates and first year pupil teachers was subdivided, the Clerk was requested to submit a monthly statement of attendance, and it was decided to present a suitable card to each student stating the marks gained in each subject at the quarterly examinations, which were set by the class teachers.(2)

Having launched the system and made the minor administrative changes essential to its smooth running, the Board naturally assumed that the instruction of pupil teachers was proceeding satisfactorily. Indeed, during the first eighteen months, this seems to have been the case, as no criticism of the system, actual or implied, appears in the Minutes. However, by the end of 1883, the classes were not as universally successful

- 
1. H.E. Oakley H.M.I., C of C on Ed. Report 1876-77, P.524, criticised S.B.'s who left school management to permanent officials.
  2. 14 Feb. 1883. S.B.M. Vol.E, P.224.

as had been expected. On 12 December the Clerk reported the bad conduct of several pupil teachers at the central classes and a strong letter was sent, to the miscreants, warning them that, if no improvement was made, the Board would cancel their engagements.<sup>(1)</sup> Further misconduct evidently occurred, as in March 1884 the Board was furnished with the names of nine pupil teachers who had been admonished by the Chairman of the Board for irregular attendance<sup>(2)</sup> and in November 1886 two pupil teachers, Charles Wilkins and Edward T. Crozier, were dismissed for "inattention and bad conduct."<sup>(3)</sup>

The most serious instances of the pupil teachers' reprehensible conduct were contained in two letters, one from Mr. Fisher, H.M.I. and the other from W.H. Denton Esq., in May 1884. The former<sup>(4)</sup> referred to the conduct of certain pupil teachers during the recent examination at Prior Street school. He complained of "whispering" and "talking" and that they "did not heed warnings." He also commented adversely that several girls had brough needlework specimens, already fixed, for the exercises which they were to work "thus gaining more than the time allowed"; all examples of conduct which "points to a considerable laxity on the part of pupil teachers - a laxity calculated to act unfavourably in the schools where they are employed."

Mr. Denton's letter<sup>(5)</sup> stated that a number of pupil

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.E, P.465.
  2. S.B.M. Vol.F, P.14.
  3. S.B.M. Vol.G, P.166.
  4. S.B.M. Vol.F, P.51-52.
  5. IBID, P.53.

teachers had not presented themselves at the recent science examinations, thereby losing £8 in grants. As a result of these reports, the Board decided to suspend any pupil teacher whose conduct was unsatisfactory.

The central classes continued to be less successful than had been hoped. Obviously the results of the examinations in 1885 must have been disappointing, as in October a special sub-committee, appointed to enquire into the "want of success of the central classes during the past year," reported. The report<sup>(1)</sup> stated that drawing and arithmetic had been very successful, but that geography, English and history had been decidedly weak. Geography and history, it was pointed out, depended on memory and the girls never had the slightest training, while in English the teacher complained of lack of interest and improperly done homework. The committee decided that the classes were generally good, but recommended that pupil teachers who did not pay full attention should be formally admonished. One further recommendation was that each head teacher should be responsible for the reading and recitation of his own pupil teachers.

The committee's final statement is worth recording as

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.F, P.424.

it sums up the Board's attitude to pupil teacher training:

"The Committee are deeply impressed with the importance of the careful training of the pupil teachers and it is certain that they cannot teach well unless well instructed."<sup>(1)</sup>

One of the factors affecting the standard<sup>(2)</sup> of the central classes was that the quality of the pupil teachers was not high enough. Several Board members appreciated this fact, and in 1886 attempts were made to establish an entrance examination and a period of probation for pupil-teachers before they were formally engaged. Two motions, to this effect, in May and June 1886, were lost. In July, however, the Rev. W. Moore Ede and the Rev. S. Atkinson proposed successfully:

"That in future when vacancies occur, for pupil teachers, there shall be an examination to test the intellectual qualifications of the candidates. The most successful of the candidates shall then be tested by a period of teaching to ascertain whether they are, in other respects, qualified for the office of pupil-teacher. No pupil teacher shall be formally engaged till the expiration of three months<sup>(3)</sup> of such preliminary trial." <sup>(4)</sup>

In July 1887 the first examination was held, subsequent examinations being held as required. After this date there seems to have been an improvement in the standard of the classes which flourished in the 1890's.

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.F, P.426.
  2. S.B.M. Vol.G, P.128, Sept.1886. Attempted motion to abolish Classes Amended to see how they can be made more efficient.
  3. Reduced to six weeks. Code of Regulations for Guidance of Teachers, 1892.
  4. S.B.M. Vol.G, P.104.

Reorganisation of the central classes was forced on the Board by the New Code in 1890. In June, the Committee reported that during the previous year the classes appeared to have done good work, although the official results were not yet to hand.<sup>(1)</sup> The new code, it pointed out would necessitate some changes. The examination of 4th Year pupil teachers was abolished, and those wishing to become assistant teachers had to qualify by passing the Queen's Scholarship Examination, in the December preceding or following the termination of their engagement. The grants were reduced but a new one, for passing the Queen's Scholarship Examination was instituted as follows:

Result	1st Yr.	2nd Yr.	3rd Yr.	Scholarship	
Good	£2	£2	£3	£5	1st attempt
Fair	£1	£1	£2	£4	" "

To give the 4th Year pupil teachers every opportunity of passing the examination with credit, the standard required for entry to a residential college, a day training college, or the office of assistant-teacher, a scholarship class was formed and one teacher, Mr. L.G.W. Scott of Prior Street school, made responsible for their instruction. He was paid £52 for the session of 40 weeks. To help him, Mr. Scott was permitted to nominate one assistant on the usual terms.

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.J, P.96.

For other classes, the arrangements remained as they had been in previous years:

<u>Class</u>	<u>Teacher</u>
Candidates	Mr. Gowland
1st Year	Mr. H. Luke
	Mr. G. Watson
2nd Year	Mr. T. Latham
	Mr. G. Stephenson *
	Mr. T. Elliott *
	Mr. R.A. Bowler *
3rd Year	Mr. W. Watson *
	Mr. T. Elliott *
	Mr. R.A. Bowler *
	Mr. G. Stephenson *

The above list is of interest when compared with the original timetable in 1882 (Page No. 271) as including Mr. Scott, 5 teachers (\*) were still doing the majority of the instruction which they had begun in 1882.

Another reorganisation of the central classes took place in 1891<sup>(1)</sup> when a full time instructor, Mr. Eastwood, was appointed, and for the majority of pupil teachers evening classes were replaced by a system of 'day release' instruction. First and second year pupil teachers were instructed in day classes as follows:

1st Year	Monday A.M.
2nd Year	Tuesday A.M.
1st Year	Wednesday A.M.
2nd Year	Thursday A.M.
1st Year	Friday A.M.
2nd Year	Saturday A.M.

---

1. In 1891 Central Classes transferred to former H.G.S. premises on Windmill Hills. S.B.M. Vol.J, P.295.

Third year students were instructed on Monday and Wednesday, and received a half holiday each week; fourth year pupil teachers attended classes from 6.30 - 8.30 p.m. on Tuesdays and Thursdays. Candidates received instruction at the Higher Grade School. All pupil teachers and candidates also received instruction on Saturday mornings from selected teachers.

Headteachers remained responsible for the needlework, scripture and reading of 3rd and 4th year pupil teachers and for the needlework only of 1st and 2nd year pupil teachers.

The Committee pointed out that the new scheme had the additional merit of being economical. It was estimated that the expenditure would be:

Instructor:	£160	
1 Assistant for 40 weeks at 6/- per night:	£ 48	
Saturday Mornings:		
1 Music Teacher	£ 6	
2 History Teachers )		
2 Language Teachers)	£ 32	
5 Drawing Teachers	<u>£ 50</u>	
TOTAL	<u>£296</u>	(1)

This would represent a substantial saving on the previous year (1889-90): (2)

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.J, P.293 et seq.
  2. IBID.

Grants:	<u>INCOME</u>			<u>EXPENDITURE</u>		
	£.	s.	d.	£.	s.	d.
Ed. Dept.	152.	0.	0.	Balance	265.	12. 9
Science	59.	0.	0.	Grants to P/Ts	49.	0. 0.
Art	26.	0.	0.	Books etc.	44.	14. 6.
Balance(Rates)	<u>122.</u>	<u>7.</u>	<u>3.</u>			
	<u>359.</u>	<u>7.</u>	<u>3.</u>		<u>359.</u>	<u>7. 3.</u>

The scheme was adopted by the Board in March 1891 and not only improved the efficiency of the central classes but relieved the heavy burden of teaching and instruction which the pupil-teachers, especially the younger ones, had had to bear.

The reorganised system worked satisfactorily. It was expanded in 1896<sup>(1)</sup> when Mr. Eastwood was given a full-time assistant, and the "day release" principle was extended:

	Morning	Afternoon	Evening
1st Year	4	-	-
2nd Year	1	3	-
3rd Year	-	1	1
4th Year	-	1	1

At the same time, a system of report books, which had to be regularly marked by the principal and assistant teachers and submitted to the managers, was introduced. Senior pupil teachers were also given half an hour's private study from

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.N, P.38.

9.15 - 9.45 daily, except when giving scripture lessons, under the supervision of head teachers. Finally, although headteachers were not actually instructing their pupil teachers, the Board wished it to be clearly understood that they were responsible for seeing that pupil teachers were giving "due diligence to and profiting by the central instruction."

In October 1897, the classes were transferred to rooms in the Higher Grade School, and in 1898 the time table was again reorganised:(1)

TIME	MONDAY	TUESDAY	WEDNESDAY	THURSDAY	FRIDAY	SAT.
A.M.	C's 1st & 2nd Years	C's 1st & 2nd Years	3rd Years	C's 1st & 2nd Years	3rd Years	All Classes for specific and drawing
P.M.	Scholarship	4th Year	Scholarship	4th Year	C's 1st & 2nd Years	
EV.	3rd Year	Scholarship				

In 1900 the Board investigated the numbers of staff employed at central classes, their remuneration and teaching hours in other school board districts. The sub-committee's report, presented in March, showed that the teaching staff, of two full time teachers, was inferior to those in other areas. Information was obtained from fifteen school boards. Sixty teachers were employed;

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.0, P.158.

an average of four per centre. The centres were attended by 2,672 pupils; an average of 178 per centre. In Gateshead the attendance was not less than 160 and there were only two teachers. As regards salary, Mr. Watson,<sup>(1)</sup> principal of the central classes, received £235 p.a., less than any other principal except the one at Wolverhampton. The average salary was £280. recommendations were therefore accepted to increase his salary immediately by £10 and then by £5 p.a. to £280. Another full-time assistant was also appointed.<sup>(2)</sup>

From 1896 the principal of the central classes had intimated that the premises for the classes were unsuitable. Their transference to the Higher Grade School did not ease the situation and again in 1900 it was stated that three good teaching rooms were required. Nothing was done to improve the situation even when the inspector commented on the problem in 1901,<sup>(3)</sup> and the classes remained at the Higher Grade school until the Board handed over to the local authority.

Despite inadequate premises, in the later years, the central classes after their early troubles successfully replaced the haphazard instruction of the early pupil teachers; those who attended the classes receiving a uniform standard of efficient instruction.

- 
1. Succeeded Mr. Eastwood. S.B.M. Vol.0, P.31.
  2. S.B.M. Vol.P, P.224.
  3. IBID, P.528.

From results published in the 1890's, the worth of the system can be deduced.

QUEEN'S SCHOLARSHIP RESULTS (1)					
Year	1st Class	2nd Class	3rd Class	Fail	Total
1892	5	8	5	3	21
1895	6	14	6	13	39
1896	6	15	4	6	31
1897	4	14	16	-	34
1898	9	16	10	-	35
1899	7	21	13	4	45
1900	4	11	7	-	22

Individual pupil teachers also gained academic distinction.

In 1895 Mr. Richard Wilson, of Brighton Avenue, was congratulated by the Board on the award of his B.A. degree

"being the first teacher in the service of the Board (as scholar, pupil teacher and assistant) to obtain this distinction." (2)

In 1902 the academic successes of two further former pupil teachers were recorded. Mr. Percy Dickenson obtained a Toynbee Hall Scholarship and an Exhibition to King's College, Cambridge; he was awarded £5 by the School Board and £10 by the Town Council - probably the first grants given to a university student in Gateshead.(4) The other former pupil teacher,

- 
1. Compiled from Minutes. Vol.K, P.263; Vol.M, P.407; Vol.N, P.230; Vol.O, P.67-68; Vol.O, P.433.
  2. S.B.M. Vol.M, P.257.
  3. S.B.M. Vol.Q, P.433.
  4. N.C. P.163. In September Miss E. Grey a former P/T was awarded £25 by Corporation to continue studies at Newcastle College for 3rd Year. S.B.M. Vol.Q, P.543.

Mr. J.T. Brewis was congratulated on being top of the first division in all seven subjects that he had taken at Owen's College, Manchester.(1)

The worth of the system is therefore amply demonstrated and perhaps the best postscript to the account of pupil teacher instruction in Gateshead was made by the inspector in 1901:

"These classes are conducted with zeal and enthusiasm" (2)

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.Q, P.433.  
2. S.B.M. Vol.P, P.528.

Pupil Teachers Central System

Day & Hour	Class I	Class II	Class III	Class IV
TUESDAY 6.30- 7.30	Maths. (Elliott, T)	Geog. (Bowler, R.A)	Science (Eltringham)	English (Peart)
7.30- 8.30	Geog. (Bowler R.A)	Maths. (Elliott, T)	English (Peart)	Science (Eltringham)
WEDNESDAY 7.00- 9.00	NEEDLEWORK IN SCHOOLS - FEMALES			
THURSDAY 6.30- 7.30	English (Stephenson, G)	Science ( ? )	Maths (Scott)	Geog. (Bowler R.A)
7.30- 8.30	Science ( ? )	English (Stephenson, G)	Geog. (Bowler R.A)	Maths (Scott)
SATURDAY 9.00-10.00	French (Keary, J)	French (Keary, J)	Latin (Watson, W.)	Latin (Watson, W)
10.00-11.00	Drawing (Morgan, M)	Drawing (Morgan M)	Drawing (Clark)	Drawing (Walton)
11.15-12.15	History (Stephenson, G)	History (Stephenson, G)	History ( ? )	History ( ? )

MAY 1882

NOTES: 1. Special arrangements will be made for Domestic Economy.

2. Once a month, Music instead of Drawing, as 14 Feb. 1883 - Special Circular to H/T's about necessity of carefully observing Code of Regulations regarding R.I. for P/T's.

CHAPTER XIIThe Curriculum of the Board Schools

'Don't they teach you to count at the Board-school?' he asked.  
 'Nowt but Algebra an' French,' said a collier.  
 'An' cheek an' impidence,' said another.

D.H. Lawrence. Sons and Lovers.

Despite the flippant comments of the colliers, the correct answer to the question put to Paul Morel was that the Board schools did teach their pupils to count; indeed the 3 R's, reading, writing and arithmetic, were the basis of the elementary school curriculum.

All public schools provided by school boards<sup>(1)</sup> had to comply with the Code of Regulations laid down by the Education Department, which by defining the subjects for which grant could be earned effectively controlled their curriculum.<sup>(2)</sup>

The 1871 Code, the first to affect board schools, laid down the following grants for children over seven, providing that the school had met at least 400 times:

"(a) 6/- per scholar in average attendance.

- 
1. Voluntary schools in receipt of grants had to subscribe to the Code as far as secular instruction was concerned.
  2. Grants could also be obtained from the Science and Art Department, notably for drawing but also for a number of other subjects.

- (b) 4/- for passing in reading; 4/- for passing in writing and 4/- for passing in arithmetic.
- (c) 3/- each for passing in not more than two specific subjects which were geography, history, algebra, language: (i) English language and literature, (ii) elements of Latin, French or German, physical geography and animal physiology." (1)

No grant was payable if a grant for the subject had already been received from the Science and Art Department.

The subjects obligatory in any board school, therefore, were reading, writing and arithmetic; in addition two specific subjects could be taught and religious instruction of an undenominational character could be given.

As time went by, various amendments were made to the Code, and they had the twin effects of freeing elementary schools from the stifling tyranny of "payment by results" and of liberalising the curriculum. The first important amendment occurred in the 1875 Code. Class subjects - history, geography and elementary science - were introduced, and they were assessed by group examination.(2)

A major revision of the Code was made in 1882. Although payment by results remained as its basis, henceforward grants were

- 
1. Code of Regulations 1871. Articles 19-21.
  2. The number of specific subjects allowed was raised to three, provided the candidate had passed the sixth standard.

not assessed on individual attendance but on average attendance, and, although all scholars had to be presented to the inspector, only those who had been in the school for a minimum of twenty-two weeks had to be examined. Under the 1882 Code, seven different grants could be awarded to elementary schools:

- (a) A fixed grant of 4/6d.
- (b) A merit grant of 1/-, 2/- or 3/- depending on the schools grading as fair, good or excellent.
- (c) A 1/- grant for needlework (calculated on the average attendance of girls only).
- (d) A grant for singing: 1/- (if by note) or 6d (if by ear).
- (e) A grant for the three elementary subjects to be determined by the percentage of passes at the rate of 1d. per unit of percentage (i.e. maximum 8/4d per scholar).
- (f) A grant of 1/- or 2/- per scholar, for each if not more than two class subjects,
- (g) A grant for each of not more than two specific subjects at the rate of 4/- for each individual pass.

Three of the seven grants listed above require further comment. The merit grant (b) was paid in respect of:

- (i) the organisation and discipline;
  - (ii) the intelligence employed in instruction; and
  - (iii) the general quality of the work, especially in
-

elementary subjects.

The subjects which could be taken as class subjects were not carefully laid down in the Code. They had to be chosen from English, geography, elementary science, history and needlework.<sup>(1)</sup> One class subject had to be English, and in Standards I to IV (except for girls who could take needlework) the second subject had to be geography or elementary science. Above Standard IV, history could be taught. The specific subjects, of which there were twelve, divided into mathematical, scientific and linguistic groups, could only be taken by pupils who were presented for examination in the elementary subjects, in Standards V to VII.

For infants' schools, the 1882 Code prescribed a merit grant of 2/-, 4/- or 6/-, which could be withheld if instruction in the elementary subjects was unsatisfactory; a 1/- grant for needlework and a grant for singing could also be earned.

In the decade 1880 - 1890, the teaching of class subjects made practically no advance and specific subjects already showed a decline.<sup>(2)</sup> The Cross Commission Reports in 1888 recognised that the fault largely lay in the Code and advocated a modification of the system of payment by results; a minority report, submitted by certain commissioners, advocated to the abolition

---

1. If taken as a class subject no grant could be earned under (c) above.  
2. Smith. 'A History of English Elementary Education 1760-1902' P.320.

of the system.

No changes were made until 1890. The Code published that year swept away the worst features of payment by results<sup>(1)</sup> by abolishing grants for the 3 R's, raising the fixed grant to 14/- and reducing the merit grant. Grants for needlework, singing, cookery and for class and specific subjects were retained. The 1890 Code also marked the beginning of a more liberal outlook by the Education Department.<sup>(2)</sup> Laundry work was added to the curriculum, drawing was made compulsory for all boys in upper departments, and manual instruction, science and physical training, whether in a school or in a centre, were allowed to count for attendance.

The liberalisation of the curriculum continued. During the 1890's the range of subjects allowed by the Code increased, organised sports and games were developed, and excursions to museums and historic buildings, now a regular feature of school life, were sanctioned.<sup>(3)</sup> In 1894 the system of individual examination was replaced by class examination, except when a child wished to leave school before time. Nearly all the grants were assessed on average attendance subject to favourable reports.<sup>(4)</sup> Finally, in 1897, a block grant system was introduced which meant that a school virtually received a fixed grant.<sup>(5)</sup>

---

1. In 1897 even the Science and Art Department ceased to pay grants on examination results. Smith 'A History of English Elementary Education 1760-1902', P.331.

2. Smith 'A History of English Elementary Education 1760-1902' P.330-331

3. IBID. P.332-334. 4. 7th T.R.1894, P.9.

5. 9th T.R. 1900, P.17.

The result of these major changes, and of many other minor changes to the Code, was that the elementary school curriculum at the end of the school board era was more similar to that of the pre-1944 elementary schools than that of 1870.

Having outlined the requirements of the Code and the main changes in it, it is now pertinent to examine its application in Gateshead Board schools. Throughout the period 1872-1903 the 3 R's and religious instruction<sup>(1)</sup> were taught. Naturally the Board's minutes and reports contain little evidence of the teaching of the elementary subjects, but it is disappointing that the school log books yield little additional evidence of the subject matter, the timetable and organisation of the schools, the teaching methods, employed, and the books used. Reading, writing and arithmetic were, however, such a basic part of the curriculum that it is understandable, although frustrating to a modern reader, that headteachers should make blanket entries like, "School work has continued during the week according to the timetable", or "new stock of books arrived today", without recording the details for which we crave.

At Prior Street school<sup>(2)</sup> the scholars were formed into classes corresponding to the standards laid down in the Code, although where the numbers were high the standard was subdivided

- 
1. See Chapter XIII.
  2. Prior Street Boys' and Girls' Log Books. On this point and many others of routine it is probable that the system used at Prior Street would, with minor variations, be followed in the other elementary schools and this point has been assumed.

into two or more classes. The headteacher usually taught the highest standard<sup>(1)</sup> while the assistants and pupil teachers usually taught the classes in descending order of seniority as follows:

Prior Street Girls' School 1877 (2)

Standard V	Miss Mitchell	Principal
IV	Miss Dunner	Cert. Assistant
III 1.	Miss Rodd	Assistant
2.	Miss Boag	5th Year Pupil Teacher
II 1.	Miss McKenzie	3rd " " "
2.	Miss Nicholson	3rd " " "
I 1.	Miss McRoberts	3rd " " "
2.	Miss J.McKenzie	1st " " "
3.	Miss Gardner	1st " " "

The boys' school was organised along similar lines.

The class teacher obviously taught his or her own class all subjects except music<sup>(3)</sup> drill, cookery and manual instruction for which specialists were employed.

Miss Mitchell, the headmistress of Prior Street girls' school strikes a more personal note than her male counterpart in the boys' school. From her we learn that Jarrold's series of

- 
1. On occasions the head teacher did teach another standard if it was a 'difficult' or 'weak' class.
  2. Prior Street Girls' Log Book, P.48.
  3. After 1882 Class teachers responsible for music, see page

reading books were used; she mentions specifically Jarrold's "Learning to Read" and Jarrold's "Standard I Reading Book" (1) and obviously the other standard readers would be used in the appropriate classes. Miss Mitchell also records that the pupils had to buy their own readers; a fact corroborated by the head-master of the boys' school in December 1882(2)

The importance of the elementary subjects is evidenced by the fact that in each school monthly tests were held by the head teacher and the results faithfully recorded. Class subjects and specific subjects were similarly tested, though less frequently. As the government examination drew near both log books record that the normal timetable was often interrupted to make time for extra tuition in weak subjects.

The pupils, although occasionally mischievous or lazy, were generally hard working and Miss Mitchell comments:

"They seem very anxious to do their best and are very disappointed when they fail." (3)

Occasionally adverse criticisms of individual teachers also appear, but generally the impression gained is that the staff were conscientious and hard working, if not as well educated as one could have hoped. Once again Miss Mitchell records:

- 
1. Girls' log book, P.7.
  2. Boys' log book, P.304.
  3. Girls' log book, P.11.

"Punctuality and (ir)regular attendance are our only enemies to success. There is no lack of zeal on the part of the teachers." (1)

The enthusiasm and will to work by pupils and teachers produced good results in Gateshead board schools and the grant earned per child generally showed an upward trend.

(2)

Year	Passes In:			Grant per Child	% Passes
	Reading	Writing	Arithmetic		
1873	29	38	24	-	-
1874	65	34	38	-	-
1875	352	336	318	-	-
1876	925	866	798	14. 2d	85
1877	1,478	1,407	1,270	15. 3d	88.9
1878	1,801	1,787	1,703	15. 6d	88
1879	2,316	2,200	2,082	15.10d	91

The above figures, although good, hide several important defects of which the Board, the inspectors, and sometimes the teachers, were aware. The first point is that the number of passes, when considered in relation to the average attendance and the number of pupils qualified to take the examination, was not as good as it appeared to be. The Board compiled the following table in 1876:

(3)

Average Attendance	Qualified for Examination	Number who actually sat Examination	% who sat of those in AV. ATTDCE
2,026	1,520	1,376	68%

1. Girls' log book, P.50.
2. 2nd T.R. 1879, P.13.
3. 1st T.R. 1876, P.6.

Early entries in the log books and the first reports by the inspectors mention the same point, but as measures to encourage attendance became effective, the number of those in average attendance, and the percentage who actually sat the examination improved.

Another point of which the inspectors were aware was that the preoccupation with passing the examination, although it produced results, also produced bad teaching. Two comments suffice to illustrate the point:

"The general efficiency of the school might be promoted if the instruction was somewhat less exclusively confined to preparation for the annual examination." (1)

and:

"Possibly too much time had been spent in preparation for the kind of sums that were expected rather than in grounding the girls in the principles of the subject." (2)

The third point that concerned the Board was the large percentage of children in the lower standards. (3) This weakness was a national one. In 1876 only 17.96% of all children England and Wales were in Standards IV to VI. (4) By 1886 the figure had improved to 34.68%. (5) A direct comparison with Gateshead is not possible but in 1873 "in one of the oldest schools in the borough only 40% were presented for examination in the four upper standards. (6)

- 
1. Boys' log book P.321. Report of HMI 30 April 1883.
  2. Report on Redheugh Girls' School, 19 July 1883.
  3. 2nd T.R. 1879, P.14.
  4. Birchenough. 'History of English Elementary Education from 1800 to present Day' 4th Edition 1938, P.153.
  5. IBID.
  6. 3rd T.R. 1882, P.16.

By 1882, only 46% of pupils qualified to take the examination were presented in Standards IV, V and VI.(1)

Some idea of the numbers presented in the upper standards and the passes obtained in specific subjects are given below:

(2)

Year	No. Examined Standards IV - VI	No. passed in SPECIFICS
1880	757	531
1881	921	603
1882	1,063	710
1883	1,320	* 355
1884	1,542	410
1885	1,999	458

\* NEW CODE

In 1885 the Board expressed its hope that the numbers in standards V to VII would increase, as the Board felt that the majority of these who left before standard V soon forgot what they had learnt;(3) a view shared by the deputation which requested recreative evening classes in the same year (see Chapter VII).

No further figures are available to show the numbers continuing into the higher standards, but in 1887 the chairman said, "a satisfactory feature is the increased number who pass into the upper standards."(4) In 1888, 545 passed in specific subjects and 577 in 1889.(5)

- 
1. 3rd T.R. 1882, P.16.
  2. 4th T.R. 1885, P.8.
  3. IBID.
  4. S.B.M. Vol.H, P.308.
  5. IBID.

Despite the three points above mentioned which detract from the quality of the results, examination successes continued to improve and the grant earned continued to increase, as the following table shows:

(1)

Year	% Passes In:			Grant per Child
	Reading	Writing	Arithmetic	
1881	91	84	86	17. 1d
1882	91	86	86	16. 10d
1883*	93	88	88	17. 9d.

\* NEW CODE

Comparative figures for the year 1881 are not unflattering to Gateshead.

(2)

Year	Board Schools	% Passes In:		
		Reading	Writing	Arithmetic
1881	Sheffield	93.5	87.5	83.5
	National	88.25	80.44	74.9

After the 1882 Code, schools were graded 'fair', 'good' or 'excellent' and a merit grant awarded on the grading. In 1883, eight Gateshead schools, two boys', one girls' and five infants' were awarded the highest grant.(3) The general standard of the schools continued to improve. In 1887, seven schools were graded 'excellent', twenty-six 'good' and two 'fair'.(4) In 1889 and

- 
1. Compiled from S.B.M. Vol.D, P.404; Vol.E, P.371.
  2. Bingham, 'Education Under the Local Authority in Sheffield. The Period of the Sheffield School Board 1870-1903' P.150.
  3. The same result was gained in 1884, S.B.M. Vol.F, P.110.
  4. S.B.M. Vol.G, P.345.

1890 the gradings were as follows:

(1)

Year	Excellent	Good
1889	18	19
1890	22	15

There is evidence that grammar, geography and needlework were taught as class and specific subjects in the early years.<sup>(2)</sup>

As further schools were opened there is further evidence that English and animal physiology<sup>(3)</sup> were added to the list of class subjects, while algebra, French, domestic economy, Euclid and mensuration were taught as specific subjects.

Once again the log books contain little information about the subject matter and teaching method used except for the poetry to be learnt.<sup>(4)</sup> Several of the works listed are still used today: Goldsmith's "Deserted Village", Southey's "The Inchcape Rock" Wordsworth's "Lucy Gray" and "We Are Seven" and Byron's "Destruction of Sennacherib", but many others: "Nellie's Prayer" by G.R. Simm, "MeddlesomeMatty" by Jane Taylor, "Mary Queen of Scots" by A.G. Bell, "War and The League" by Lord Macaulay and "From India" by W.C. Bennett, have long since passed out of fashion. The upper standards were introduced to Shakespeare, as selections from King

- 
1. 7th T.R. 1894, P.9.
  2. 1st T.R. 1876, P.7 and School Log Books.
  3. Until 1882 taught as specific subjects.
  4. All examples are taken from lists, approved by the inspectors, recorded in the school log books.

Henry IV, Part I, from King John and from the Merchant of Venice are listed to be learnt. The pupil teachers also learnt selections from Milton's 'Paradise Lost'.

Music, drawing, cookery and manual instruction were also taught in the elementary schools. Music was taught from an early date in Gateshead board schools, for, when Prior Street schools were opened (1874) the Board "recognising the importance of singing - upon which a grant of 1/- per scholar in average attendance or upwards of £200 depends,"<sup>(1)</sup> appointed a qualified part-time music teacher.<sup>(2)</sup> The teacher visited each school in turn and as the number of schools increased, so did his duties. By 1879, the Board was able to record:

".....all Boys' and Girls' departments now receive regular and systematic instruction in the rudiments of singing on the Tonic Sol-fa method." <sup>(3)</sup>

On the evidence of the Prior Street school log books, it seems that in addition to teaching the pupils, the music teacher held a special class for the teachers and pupil teachers after school from 4.30 - 5.20 p.m. The instruction must have been worthwhile, as on several occasions, when the music teacher was absent, the headmaster records with pride that he had taken the music lessons personally.

- 
1. 2nd T.R. 1879, P.14.
  2. In 1895 a full-time teacher was appointed.
  3. 2nd T.R. 1879, P.14.

The wisdom of appointing a singing teacher paid dividends when the 1882 Code offered a full grant where children were satisfactorily taught to sing from notes. On 11 October 1882, therefore, the teaching of music was reorganised,<sup>(1)</sup> as in future singing was to be tested more rigorously than hitherto standard by standard. Each assistant teacher was made responsible, under the head-teacher for the proficiency of his or her class. Mr. McCallum, the music teacher, was instructed to arrange a short course of music lessons for all assistant teachers and for the head teachers of infants' schools; pupil teachers were not required to attend, but they had to assist with the music lessons in their own schools. As soon as a teacher obtained the intermediate Tonic Sol-fa certificate, he was exempt from compulsory attendance at the music lessons. Finally, Mr. McCallum was instructed to visit each senior school for at least half an hour each week and each infants' department at least once a month to see that the lessons and plans of the teachers' classes were being followed. This duty placed Mr. McCallum in a position analogous to that of a local authority inspector or organiser, rather than that of a teacher. These preparations were successful, as, in 1883, the full singing grant was obtained in every school except one.<sup>(2)</sup>

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.E, P.180-182.  
 2. IBID, P.371..

In 1885 pianos were introduced into board schools.<sup>(1)</sup>

Two interesting minutes, concerning pianos, occur in the 1890's.

In March 1897, the headmaster of Brighton Avenue, having £10 surplus revenue from a school concert, informed the Board that he was anxious to procure a piano and offered to pay half the cost; a suggestion to which the Board readily assented.<sup>(2)</sup> The second minute, in September 1900, concerns an application by the headmaster of Shipcote School, who having raised half the cost by voluntary effort, requested permission to purchase a piano. The Board's resolution:

"In accordance with usual custom the committee recommend that one be supplied,"<sup>(3)</sup>

implied that the Board encouraged, if it did not expect, schools to assist in the purchase of their own pianos.

Another step in the development of music teaching occurred in 1892, when the managers of the Higher Grade School were empowered to arrange for the teaching of pianoforte, which had been requested by 30 - 40 pupils.<sup>(4)</sup> A teacher, who would be paid the fees less 10% was advertised for and the following scale of charges laid down:

1 member of a family	-	12/-	per qtr.
2 members " " "	-	20/-	per qtr.
3 members " " "	-	24/-	per qtr. (5)

- 
1. 5th T.R. 1888, P.7.
  2. S.B.M. Vol.N, P.186.
  3. S.B.M. Vol.P, P.496.
  4. S.B.M. Vol.K, P.76.
  5. IBID, P.108.

In April two teachers of pianoforte were appointed to the Whitehall Road Higher Grade School. Soon after its opening, another teacher was appointed to the Durham Road Higher Grade School.(1)

Obviously a choir of Gateshead school children was formed as the Prior Street School Log Books(2) record that several pupils took part in a concert held in the Town Hall in 1879. Further concerts were held in 1880 and 1883.(3) In 1891, a choir of 150 senior pupils entertained the assembled gathering at the opening of the Whitehall Road School.(4) It was also stated that the choir was to give a series of concerts to raise money for the Higher Grade School scholarship fund.

Drawing was also taught in board schools from an early date. In 1879, it was stated that drawing "is taught in all Boys' and Girls' Departments with gratifying success."(5) Judging from the number of papers worked and the grants earned, drawing must have been extensively and well taught.

Year	Drawing Grant
1877	£45. 16. 0.
1878	£61. 4. 0.
1879	£85. 15. 0.

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.L, P.375.
  2. IBID, P.144.
  3. 4th T.R. 1885, P.10.
  4. Newcastle Daily Chronicle 31/10/91.
  5. 2nd T.R. 1879, P.14.

In 1879, 1,271 pupils learnt drawing and earned while twenty, chiefly pupil teachers, passed 2nd Grade Drawing.<sup>(1)</sup>

Figures for 1880 are as follows:

(2)

Number of Passes							Total Under Instruction
1st Grade			2nd Grade				
Freehand	Model	Geom.	Freehand	Model	Geom.	Perspective	
1,880	149	462	47	11	37	5	

The above papers were worked by pupils from Alexandra Road, Prior Street, Sunderland Road, Redheugh, Sheriff Hill, High Level Road and Grant Street schools. In 1881, 3,600<sup>(3)</sup> exercises were worked, and in 1882 the Board stated:

"Elementary freehand, model and geometrical drawing continue to be taught in senior departments." <sup>(4)</sup>

Results from 1883-85 were:

(5)

Year	First Grade			No. of 2nd Grade Passes	Total Passes	Total Exercise Worked
	No. of Exercises Marked Fair	No. Marked Good	No. Marked Excellent			
1883	1,344	334	147	6	1,831	2,631
1884	1,396	626	134	8	2,164	2,643
1885*	1,611	889	131	12	2,643	3,445
Total	4,351	1,849	412	26	6,638	8,719

\* Includes Higher Grade School

1. 2nd T.R. 1879, P.14.
2. S.B.M. Vol.D, P.131.
3. IBID, P.319.
4. 3rd T.R. 1882, P.9.
5. 4th T.R. 1885, P.7.

In 1886 the Board reported that drawing was being taught as a class subject. It would appear from the Board's minutes that, up to 1887, grants had been awarded by the Education Department, as in May it was stated that the drawing grant was being awarded by the Science and Art Department and that judging by results, the change had proved satisfactory.<sup>(1)</sup> However, this assumption is not borne out by the evidence of the Prior Street School Log Books, in which numerous entries from 1875 onwards show that the drawing exams were conducted by the Science and Art Department.

The Triennial Reports in 1885 and 1891 confirm that drawing was taught in all Boys' departments, but in 1885 the girls were no longer taught drawing as a subject of ordinary instruction, as the Science and Art Directory said, that if drawing was to gain a grant, it must be accompanied by lessons in cookery;<sup>(2)</sup> a connection that the Board was unable to comprehend. Once again the school log books tell us that at Prior Street drawing continued to be taught to girls and examined. Probably, this was because cookery was introduced into the school in 1886, and presumably drawing was also taught to girls in the other schools in which cookery was introduced.

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.G, P.345.  
 2. 4th T.R. 1885, P.7.

The Board's first attempt to arrange for cookery instruction was short-lived. A practical cookery school was established in the Mechanics' Institute in 1877. Rooms were rented for the use of schoolgirls on Monday to Friday afternoons from 2 - 4 p.m; the rooms were also rented on Saturday afternoon and Monday to Friday evenings from 6 - 8 p.m. for classes for ladies and artisans' wives.<sup>(1)</sup> A qualified teacher was appointed. The girls' classes opened on the 3rd June, and the adult classes after the summer vacation. Unfortunately, the scheme was not a success and was discontinued after the special finance committee report in 1878,<sup>(2)</sup> but the Board stated, somewhat vaguely, that theoretical cookery continued to be taught .

Practical cookery lessons had not been restarted by 1882, but, in view of the special 4/- grant and of their importance to the community, the Board said attention would be given to the subject.<sup>(3)</sup> By 1885 cookery was gradually being introduced into the schools,<sup>(4)</sup> and in 1886 four centres were appointed and a peripatetic teacher appointed to visit each in turn.<sup>(5)</sup> The premises used make interesting reading, when compared with modern cookery rooms. The Higher Grade school centre was established in the dining room, the Prior Street

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.66.

2. IBID, P.344-50.

3. 3rd T.R. 1882, P.10.

4. 4th T.R. 1885, P.7.

5. Further teachers were appointed as the scheme was extended.

centre in the cloakroom, the Durham Road centre in the teachers' room and the Sunderland Road centre outside in the girls' shed.(1) The lessons were to be practical "such as will prove of service and utility in artisan homes", (2) and they were to include bakery and the preparation of invalid, sickroom and infants' diets. The teacher had to give ten, two hour, lessons each week and be prepared to teach higher class cookery in the evenings for an extra fee.

In 1887 the inspector reported that cookery was "well-taught", an assertion borne out by the results; in 1888, 430 passes were obtained and 463 in 1889.(3)

Gradually the teaching of cookery expanded. In 1891 the teachers' room at Sheriff Hill school was adapted for cookery(4) and later special rooms were erected at Askew Road and Alexandra Road schools.(5) By 1891 most senior girls received systematic instruction in cookery,(6) and by 1893 enough special teachers had been appointed to teach cookery to all girls in Standards IV, V, VI, and VII.(7)

Manual instruction was introduced into the Higher Grade school in 1888. In 1890, the Board, taking into account the 6/- or 7/- grant offered by the Science and Art Department, resolved

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.G, P.59.
  2. IBID, P.86.
  3. S.B.M. Vol.H, P.308.
  4. S.B.M. Vol.G, P.374.
  5. S.B.M. Vol.J, P.105.
  6. 7th T.R. 1891, P.9.
  7. Code of Regulations for the Guidance of Teachers 1892, Art.51.

to introduce manual instruction into the ordinary elementary schools.(1) It was proposed to start with 310 boys from Alexandra Road, Prior Street, Askew Road and Redheugh schools. A deputation, which visited manual instruction centres at Liverpool and Manchester, reported favourably but emphasised that manual instruction meant the construction of objects in wood from drawings made by the boys themselves. No attempt should be made to produce articles or teach a trade as the aim was purely the training of hand and eye.(2)

The classes developed. In 1892 the system was changed so that 600 boys could benefit, and the teacher was told to organise a class on Saturday mornings for a limited number of teachers.(3) Manual instruction therefore became an established part of the curriculum.

Physical education was not ignored. In 1873 the Board supplied gymnastic apparatus to Sheriff Hill, Redheugh and Alexandra Road schools at a cost of £35.(4) Presumably the "gymnastic apparatus" bore little resemblance to that used today. It probably consisted of dumb-bells and indian clubs for physical exercises; indeed dumb-bells are mentioned in the log book of Prior Street Girls' school.

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.J, P.217.
  2. IBID, P.135.
  3. S.B.M. Vol.K, P.165.
  4. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.276.

In the 1870's a drill instructor was evidently appointed to teach military drill in the boys' schools.(1) In 1886, Sergeant Major Spedding and Sergeant Keary, instructors stationed with the Gateshead Volunteer Companies, were appointed to do ten hours drill per week, each, at a salary of £1 per man per month.(2) In the same year musical drill was presumably started in the infants' schools as, in November 1886, a course in musical drill was held for teachers.(3) By 1891 military drill was being taught in all boys' departments and musical drill in all infants' departments.(4) Despite these efforts to introduce some physical training into the curriculum, the Board reported in 1900 that:

"No well-equipped gymnasium has yet been provided in any Board school." (5)

Swimming was another sport considered by the Board in its early years. In 1877 a committee was appointed to consider the question of teaching boys swimming(6) and the architect of the Day Industrial School was instructed to show how a plunge bath could be built on the site.(7)

Unfortunately, both plans came to naught, but the interest of Board members remained. In 1886, Mr. France, the chairman, and the Rev. D. Robb, formed a deputation to request

- 
1. A drill master is mentioned in the boys' log book and in S.B.M. Vol.C, P.76.
  2. S.B.M. Vol.G, P.105-106.
  3. IBID, P.184.
  4. 6th T.R. 1891, P.9.
  5. 9th T.R. 1900, P.13.
  6. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.154.
  7. See Page 93.

Gateshead's first swimming baths were later built by the Town Council on a

the Town Council to build a swimming bath. In 1891, a committee was appointed to consider the teaching of swimming. It reported, in June, that the School Boards of London, Liverpool, Bristol and Aston had provided or were providing swimming baths and that Manchester, Birmingham, Sheffield and Burton-on-Trent School Boards had made arrangements with their local councils for school-children to be admitted to the public baths at a reduced rate.<sup>(1)</sup>

Following the committee's recommendation, a deputation was appointed to ask the Gateshead Town Council for a similar privilege. No results of the deputation's request are recorded, but in 1897 it was stated:

"During the last year or two some teachers have been impressed with the importance of teaching swimming. In two schools voluntary arrangements have been made by teachers, whereby a certain number of boys have received instruction in swimming and in giving aid to persons in danger of drowning."<sup>(2)</sup>

It would appear, therefore, that, although the initiative for swimming instruction came from the Board, the impetus which made the idea a reality came from the teachers.

In the case of soccer, both initiative and impetus came from the teachers. In December 1894, the Board considered a

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.J, P.365.  
2. 8th T.R. 1897, P.15.

letter<sup>(1)</sup> from the Gateshead Association of the National Union of Teachers stating that the association had resolved to form a schools football league and requesting the Board's permission to go ahead. The Board agreed unanimously and, in 1897, recorded that the teachers had made successful attempts to organise "football and other games".<sup>(2)</sup> The Board also recorded, with a note of pride:

"..... in the inter-league matches last season the Gateshead Boys proved themselves champions." <sup>(3)</sup>

Part of the Durham Road Higher Grade school site, which covered about six acres, was used as playing fields. From 1895 the playing fields were used for organised games for the girls from the elementary schools; headmistresses being responsible for making suitable provision for the games and for supervision of the scholars.<sup>(4)</sup> There is no record of the Board purchasing sports equipment.

The Higher Grade school field must have been played to death. During the winter months, in addition to the schools which used it, it was rented to the North-Eastern Railway Institute Football Club and the North Durham (Rugby) Football Club. The Victoria Cricket Club's application to use the field in the summer was unsuccessful. In 1899 the evening school teachers were allowed to organise games for their pupils.<sup>(5)</sup>

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.L, P.457.
  2. 8th T.R. 1897, P.15.
  3. IBID.
  4. S.B.M. Vol.M, P.83.
  5. S.B.M. Vol.P, P.92.

In another sphere, school libraries, much of the initiative seems to have come from the teachers. When libraries were considered by the Board, in September 1900, (1) it was reported that in some schools the teachers had collected, already, of their own free will, a number of books to form a library. Certainly at Prior Street a library was started in the boys' department in September 1882. (2) It operated on Friday afternoons and encouraged attendance, as the boys had to attend to procure a book.

At first only pupils in the upper standards were allowed to borrow books, but later as more books were donated, the scheme was extended to include all forms. The success of the library scheme was inevitable when one reads the following comment by the headmaster:

"Home reading is being encouraged throughout the school, but in some cases the home circumstances militate against success, as I find that in certain homes there is not a single book and the boys have had recourse to reading scraps of newspapers in which the groceries have been wrapped." (3)

Other items of interest not connected with the curriculum but indicative of the social work of the schools were the introduction of a Penny Dinner scheme in 1884, (4) the establishment of savings banks in certain schools from 1882 onwards and the distri-

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.P, P.316.

2. Boys' log book P.303.

3. Boys' log book P.485.

4. In Newcastle a system of free dinners was introduced in 1878-79, Middlebrook: 'Newcastle upon Tyne: Its Growth & Achievement' P.290.

bution of clothing to destitute children.

The Penny Dinner scheme was established prior to the Central Committee of Council on Education's circular in the spring of 1885, which gave details of the Rousden, Devonshire penny dinner experiment.(1)

The Gateshead scheme was based on the experiment conducted in the National schools in Gateshead. The Rev. W. Moore Ede, a manager of St. Mary's National school and a member of the School Board, wrote an article about the scheme in the Tyneside Chronicle on 12th September 1884.(2) At a Board meeting the following day his proposal to adopt the scheme in Board schools was accepted.

The scheme which operated through the winter months was for the General Relief Committee to have the use of Board schools and to provide 1d dinners. Centres were established at Prior Street, Redheugh, Oakwellgate, Sunderland Road, Sheriff Hill, Ellison Infants' and High Level Road (Pipewellgate).(3) During the winter 99,586 dinners were served to starving children.(4) A large proportion of the labour fell on the teachers:

"who gave their services with a self-abnegation deserving of the highest praise."(5)

- 
1. Armitage: 'Four Hundred Years of English Education' P.153.
  2. A correspondent on the same day wondered whether "... better food supply to the poor of Gateshead is likely to bring about any educational improvement." N.C.Tyneside Chronicle 12/9/84.
  3. S.B.M. Vol.F, P.177.
  4. 4th T.R. 1885, P.12.
  5. T.R. 1885, P.12.

On the evidence of the log books, the scheme continued spasmodically until 1895. Free dinners were also given to the most destitute and there is evidence that a free dinner or breakfast was often given on a Sunday or Christmas Day.

Unfortunately there is no direct evidence of the scheme's continuance, although in 1906 when the Council discussed the Education (Provision of Meals) Act it was stated:

"Machinery ..... has been in existence for several years at Gateshead for feeding poor scholars."<sup>(1)</sup>

Even if the scheme did not continue, it is an early example of the School Board assisting in the provision of one of the welfare services which a local authority is required by law to provide.

The brevity of their references and the acceptance of extreme poverty by the headteachers are eloquent of the state of destitution in which many of their pupils lived. Many entries record that pupils attended, often in appalling weather conditions, without shoes or socks. Although the Board did nothing official to relieve their suffering, individual members and the General Relief Committee often provided clothing and shoes or clogs to be distributed to the children. Distribution was not always easy as Miss Mitchell records in January 1880:

---

1. Gateshead Notes, Vol.5, P.9.

"I find great difficulty in choosing the children who are to receive the things sent - so very many are so utterly destitute and it is so grieving to see the disappointment of the little people who get nothing." (1)

Conditions did not improve and as late as 1891 we are told that "many children (were) unable to attend during the week through having no shoes."(2)

Savings banks were established in a number of Board schools. In 1882, a special committee studied the system in Yorkshire schools and recommended that Post Office Savings Banks should be introduced.(3) One bank was established and it was hoped that all schools would soon have one.(4) In 1883 the inspector of Sunderland Road school said:

"I am glad to find that a savings bank has been established and I hope that before long this will be the case with every school under the Board."(5)

By 1891, savings banks had been opened in several departments.(6)

By 1902, the elementary school curriculum permitted by the Code of Regulations was closer to that of schools before the introduction of the 1944 Act, than that of 1870. The gradual

- 
1. Girls' log book, P.80.
  2. Boys' log book, P.486.
  3. S.B.M. Vol.E, P.102-109.
  4. 3rd T.R.1882, P.10.
  5. Report on Sunderland Road school, 26 July 1884.
  6. 6th T.R. 1891, P.10.

process of liberalisation had been forced on the Education Department(1) by the gradual increase in the quality, by the increased age of the pupils and by the public desire for education beyond the minimum of the 3 R's; a desire which the large enterprising school boards had sought to fulfil. Outside the classroom the introduction of school dinners, savings banks, libraries, a schoolchildren's choir and organised sport also heralded the future expansion of facilities and activities which now are taken for granted and although it cannot be claimed that Gateshead pioneered any of these developments, the School Board did not lag behind its major contemporaries in their provision.

---

1. Renamed the Board of Education from 1 April, 1900.

## CHAPTER XIII

### Religious Instruction

Religion was a subject which caused much heartburning in debate during the passage of the 1870 Act and one which remained a controversial topic during the remainder of the nineteenth century, therefore it is necessary to examine national opinion about religious instruction as a background to the Board's efforts to apply the provisions of the 1870 Act relating to religious observance and religious instruction.

#### Historical Background

Before 1870 the provision of public elementary schools had been in the hands of voluntary agencies.<sup>(1)</sup> The managers of a particular school had provided religious instruction and required religious observance to be held in accordance with the beliefs of the denomination providing the school. The problem therefore that faced the supporters of the 1870 Act was how to ensure that effective religious instruction was given and religious observances held, which did not savour of any particular creed, which would not interfere with the wishes of any parent regarding the religious instruction of his child and which would be acceptable to the opponents of the 1870 Act, who declared that it was wrong to provide

---

1. National Society, British & Foreign Schools Society & Roman Catholic Poor Schools Committee, although Wesleyans, Congregationalists, Baptists, Methodists did provide some schools in certain areas.

schools, with public money, at which children would be required to attend and where they would be receiving religious instruction as an integral part of the syllabus.

W.E. Forster, the author of the 1870 Act, made his opinion clear in a speech to the House of Commons on the 17 February 1870:

"It seems to me quite clear, if we approach the subject without any prejudice, that in taking money from the taxpayer to give his children secular education, we have no right to interfere with his feelings as a parent or to oblige him to accept for his children religious education to which he objects." (1)

Forster's opinion found expression in the "Cowper-Temple" conscience clause which left individual school boards to decide whether religious instruction should or should not be given in board schools. If religious instruction was given, however, Section 14 of the 1870 Act stated that:

"No religious catechism or religious formulary distinctive of any particular denomination shall be taught in the school."

Section 7 of the 1870 Act preserved the parent's right to decide whether or not his child should receive religious instruction.

---

1. Verbatim Report of Debate in Parliament on Elementary Education Act 1870, National Educational Union, P.9, Col.2.

"It shall not be required as a condition of any child being admitted into or continuing in the school, that he shall attend or abstain from attending any Sunday School or any place of religious worship or that he shall attend any religious observances or instruction in religious subjects in the school or elsewhere from which observance or instruction he might be withdrawn by his parent, or that he shall if withdrawn by the parent, attend the school on any day set apart for religious observance by the religious body to which his parent belongs."

It was also enacted that religious knowledge would not be examinable as a condition for a school receiving Parliamentary Grant.

#### The Gateshead School Board and Religion

Although religious questions (which provoked controversy did arise, it is remarkable that based on the evidence of the Board's minutes, the successive Boards always discussed religion in a harmonious manner; discussion never became argument, and although an individual or religious group might seek to amend a Board decision with which they did not agree, the Board's policy, once established, was faithfully carried out by its members.

Three main religious problems arose over the years; the question of religious observance and the twin problems of an agreed syllabus for religious instruction and the examination of such instruction.

The first question, that of religious observance in Board Schools, was discussed as early as 10 April 1872 before any Board Schools were established. At a meeting on that date the

---

Ven. Archdeacon Prest, the Vice Chairman, stated that at the next meeting he would propose the following motion:

"That in all schools to be provided by this Board, prayer shall be offered and Hymns used at the time or times when according to Section 7, subsection 2 of the Elementary Education Act, religious observance may be practised.

"That the Holy Scripture according to the authorised version shall be daily read by those children who are able to read, and that the teacher shall give such simple explanations as the passage shall require."

"That in such religious observance and instruction the provisions of the Act in Sections 7 and 14 be strictly observed both in letter and spirit and that no attempt be made to attach children to any particular religious denomination." (1)

It was obvious that the second part of the motion would not be acceptable to the Methodist and Unitarian members, who objected to any form of comment or exposition, therefore on 24 April 1872, after the Ven. Archdeacon Prest had made his proposal, Mr. George Lucas, the Unitarian member, tabled the following amendment:

"That in all the schools to be provided by this Board, Prayers taken from the Scriptures shall be offered, and Hymns shall be sung by the children, and the scriptures shall be read to, and where practicable by, the scholars. These religious exercises shall be practised daily when the schools are open for educational purposes, at the time or times when religious instruction may, according to the Elementary Education Act, be communicated to the

scholars but NO COMMENT OR EXPOSITION shall be offered upon the prayers, scripture readings or hymns, nor shall any attempt be made to give instruction in the doctrine peculiar to any religious denomination."(1)

Voting took place on 8 May 1872 when the amendment was considered first and defeated by 8 votes to 2, with one abstention. The voting is interesting. For the amendment voted J. Lucas (Methodist) and G. Lucas (Unitarian) and against, the chairman, vice chairman, Messrs. Atkinson France, J.M. Redmayne, R.R. Redmayne (all C of E), Mr. Montgomery (RC) and Mr. Brown (Wesleyan). The abstention was Rev. H. Riley (RC). When the original motion was considered it was carried by 6 - 4, the Rev. H. Riley still abstaining, while the chairman (C of E) and Mr. Montgomery (RC) joined Messrs. Lucas in opposing it.(2)

The Church party voted together on both occasions, with the exception of the Chairman, Mr. Newall, whose opposition to the main motion can be explained by the fact that he had tabled the following alternative amendment, but had obtained no seconder for it:

"The Board recognise that the teaching of morality, truth and honesty are essential to the proper training of children, but believing that religious teaching, so called, if left to the masters and mistresses of schools under the control or direction of the Board, is

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.A, P.146.
  2. IBID, P.147-148.

contrary to the 7th Clause of Elementary Education Act and to the 14th Section Clause 2 of the same Act, and that it would be distasteful to the consciences of many parents of scholars, this Board deems it inadvisable to make provision in its rules for such teaching."<sup>(1)</sup>

Mr. Newall obviously did not want religious teaching in Board Schools.

The next round in the struggle, between the Church party and the non-conformists, occurred on 12 June 1872 when Mr. G. Lucas proposed:

"That a committee be appointed to make a selection of prayers and hymns and to compile a table of scripture readings for the use of schools to be connected with the Board and that in making such selections and compilations nothing be done tending to teach the doctrines peculiar to any religious denomination."<sup>(2)</sup>

As it stood, the above motion was not acceptable to the Ven. Archdeacon Prest, and he proposed an amendment, which altered the final part of the motion, to read:

".....Board, and that an endeavour be made to present to the children such a scheme of scripture readings as shall give the whole of the scripture history and a full view of the teachings of Jesus Christ suitable to the capacity of the children and that the committee consist of the whole Board."<sup>(3)</sup>

The Rev. Prest's alternative wording was accepted by Mr. Lucas and was passed by 8 votes to 2, only the chairman and

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.A, P.147.

2. IBID, P.161-162.

3. IBID.

Mr. Montgomery voting against.

When the problem of the form of religious observance was settled, there were no immediate controversial religious questions to be settled. During the life of the second School Board (1873-76) religious questions were only discussed on three occasions, the most important<sup>(1)</sup> being in June 1876, when the Diocesan Board offered, in a letter:

"to admit to their annual examination of pupil teachers and to competition for their prizes, any pupil teachers in school board schools who may avail themselves of the offer under the same regulations as those apprenticed in Church of England Schools."<sup>(2)</sup>

Obviously if the Board adhered to the provisions of the 1870 Act, it could not enter its pupil teachers for an examination, which would necessitate their being taught to a syllabus similar to candidates from C of E Schools, therefore the Board declined the offer by 7 votes to 1; only the Chairman, the Rev. Prest, voting for its acceptance. Although the result of the above voting is not surprising, the second Board having only 4 C of E members, compared with 2 Roman Catholics and 5 non-conformists, what is significant is that the Church party did not vote 'en bloc', which would have produced a much closer result.

- 
1. The other two were motions, both successful, to let the Board Schools for use as Sunday Schools and to let the schools for religious purposes.
  2. S.B.M. Vol.B, P.317.

The decisions of the First Board about religious observance endured; Archdeacon Prest's resolution of May 1872 was incorporated in the successive Codes of Regulations for the Guidance of Teachers.

The twin problems of an agreed syllabus and the examination of religious instruction first arose on 12 June 1878 when Dr. Banning proposed:

"That the Board acknowledging the importance of giving full effect to the Religious Teaching in its schools, resolves that a syllabus of Bible Reading shall be adopted, and that children shall be annually examined in their Scripture Lessons upon an appointed day at least six months after the annual inspection; the Examiners to be nominated yearly by the Board and to be requested to report to the Board upon the result of the examination." (1)

The vice chairman's amendment, to postpone a decision for one month to enable members to see the different forms of syllabus available in other schools, was carried unanimously.

On 10 July 1878, Dr. Banning's June motion was considered. An amendment by W.H. Patterson and S. Thompson

"That a syllabus of Bible Reading to be used in all the schools of the Board be prepared by the School Management Committee and submitted to the Board for approval."(2)

was defeated by the chairman's casting vote. Then, when the

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.281.
  2. IBID, P.299.

original motion was considered it was carried by 5 votes to 4. The voting was interesting in view of subsequent events in August; Dr. Banning, Dr. Redmond, Captain Dance, the Rev. R.A. Wilson and the Chairman voted in favour and the vice-chairman, Mr. Elsdon, Mr. Pattison and Mr. Thompson against.

It was also resolved by 5 votes to 4:

"That the examiners of religious teaching be laymen, that they be not paid by the Board and that the School Management Committee be instructed to prepare a syllabus for the adoption of the Board."(1)

Mr. Elsdon tried to amend the motion by inserting "being members of this Board" after the words "be laymen", but obtained no support.

On 14 August it was proposed by the vice-chairman and Mr. Swan:

"That the resolution of Dr. Banning (referring to the examination in Religious Knowledge) and adopted by the School Board at the last meeting be and is hereby rescinded."(2)

The motion was carried by 5 votes to 3, but what is interesting is that those members who had been defeated on 10 July had rallied their forces and taken the opportunity of

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.300-301.  
2. IBID, P.315.

reversing the motion when their opponents were weak. On this occasion the voting was the vice-chairman, Messrs. France, Pattinson, Swan and Thompson in favour, and the Chairman, Captain Dance and Dr. Banning against. Mr. Elsdon did not support the motion although, judging by his voting in July, he might have been expected to do so. Explanation of his abstention is found when he afterwards withdrew his own motion:

"That every resolution on the subject of Religious Teaching in the Schools of the Board be and the same is hereby rescinded and that the School Management Committee be and is hereby requested to prepare and submit to the Board for approval a syllabus of Bible lessons for general use, without note or comment, in the Schools of the Board."(1)

The religious problems were by no means solved, but they were shelved until 1886. When the questions of an agreed syllabus and its examination were raised again, Miss Connell, supported by the Rev. S. Atkinson, proposed:

"That this Board do draw up a Syllabus of Scripture instruction for use in the Gateshead Board Schools and do invite all the ministers of the Borough to form a Committee for the purpose of examining the Board Schools in the work of the said syllabus." (2)

The proposal to ask clergymen to be examiners was a complete reversal of the 1878 motion, but Miss Connell's resolution

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.C, P.315.

2. S.B.M. Vol.G, P.163.

was withdrawn when the following amendment was tabled by the Rev. W. Moore Ede and Rev. D. Robb:

"That a committee be appointed to consider the way in which the regulations relative to Biblical instruction are carried out by the teachers and to make enquiries as to the methods adopted by other Boards to secure efficient Biblical Instruction."(1)

The amendment was carried by 8 votes to 2 and circumvented the difficult problem of examination.

The next move towards the adoption of an Agreed Syllabus was in April 1887 when the Rev. W. Moore Ede and Mr. John Lucas proposed:

"That the vice-chairman, the Rev. W. Moore Ede, Rev. D. Robb and Mr. G. Rule be requested to draw up a syllabus of Biblical Instruction and report to the Board." (2)

The proposal was carried unanimously, however, on the 1 June 1887, the special committee's function was overridden when it was unanimously decided to accept the School Management Committee's recommendation:(3)

"That the Syllabus of Biblical Instruction (as adopted by the Sheffield and other School Boards) be adopted by this Board."(4)

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.G, P.163.
  2. IBID, P.268.
  3. Although unanimous, only 5 members present.
  4. S.B.M. Vol.G, P.303. See Appendix No.14.

The problem of an Agreed Syllabus, therefore, had been decided, but the thorny topic of the examination of religious instruction remained unsettled. In July 1891, therefore, the Rev. W. Moore Ede and the Rev. S. Atkinson proposed the resolution which the Board carried unanimously.(1)

"That a committee be appointed to see whether any arrangements can be made for the inspection, by examination, of the instruction in Biblical subjects prescribed in the Syllabus ordered by the Board and if so to report by what method the examination should be conducted."

Evidently the question of an Agreed Syllabus and its examination caused problems to other Boards as well, for on 21 November 1892 the Bishop of Durham held a conference of School Board representatives(2) to discuss these topics. The resolutions adopted, commended the use of a syllabus similar to those used by South Shields, Gateshead and West Hartlepool, but left the testing of the instruction to the discretion of the individual School Board.

The Bishop's conference by implication commended the Board's choice of syllabus but gave no help on the problem of examination, although it is doubtful whether the Gateshead Board, which contained several Catholic and non-conformist members, would have embraced a recommendation from a conference called by an Anglican Bishop.

---

1. 8 members were present, S.B.M. Vol.J, P.405.

2, S.B.M. Vol.K, P.313.

The problem of examination of religious instruction remained; it was not until 27 February 1900<sup>(1)</sup> that the first examination was held. It was set by the Rev. A.H. Patterson, a Board member, and consisted of questions on those portions of the New Testament laid down in the Board's syllabus.<sup>(2)</sup> The examination was given to pupils in Standard IV and upwards and it was reported that the results were good. Plans were therefore made for the examination to be held annually.

---

1. S.B.M. Vol.P, P.143.  
2. IBID, P.282.

CHAPTER XIVGateshead School of Art

The Gateshead School of Art, established in 1886, although not a School Board foundation, is worthy of mention because of the circumstances of its foundation and because it was, throughout its comparatively short life, a thriving and useful school, which provided a type and level of education much required in the town.

The initiative to form the school came from Mr. G.T.France, currently Chairman of the School Board, who, in May 1886, placed advertisements<sup>(1)</sup> in local newspapers inviting those interested in establishing a School of Art to join a deputation to the Town Council on the 9th of June. Editorial comment in the "Tyneside Echo" supported the scheme, and pointed out that Gateshead was "destitute of facilities for acquiring a knowledge of Art."<sup>(2)</sup>

Probably Mr. France had been approached by some people in the town to form a deputation as a later news cutting<sup>(3)</sup> states that certain working men petitioned the Corporation to set up a School of Art. Mr. France's deputation hoped to obtain the use of two rooms in the recently opened Public Library in Swinburne :

- 
1. Two are extant: Newcastle Daily Chronicle 25/5/86 and Tyneside Echo 25/5/86 (in Collected News Cuttings in Gateshead Public Library P.19).
  2. N.C. Tyneside Echo 25/5/86.
  3. Newcastle Daily Chronicle 3/4/86.

Street, and some help towards the cost of fittings; the South Kensington authorities were willing to contribute half of the cost.(1)

The Library committee of the Town Council considered the petition of the working men and the views of the deputation and set up an Art School sub committee of twelve members, six being members of the Council and six well known residents of the Borough. The Borough Librarian was appointed secretary and Mr. G.T. France, Treasurer.(2)

Mr. W. Fitz-James White, formerly examiner and art lecturer in the male and female departments at the National Art Training Schools, South Kensington, was appointed headmaster from twenty two applicants.(3) The school was then established in two rooms over the public library. Equipment and fittings to the value of £120, donated by the Town Council out of the library rate, were installed and the school actually opened on October 18th 1886 with twenty pupils.(4) The official opening was delayed until the 4th November.

One room was used for beginners and the other for advanced pupils. The courses of instruction available ranged

- 
1. Newcastle Daily Chronicle 25/8/86.
  2. Newcastle Daily Chronicle 3/11/86.
  3. Newcastle Daily Chronicle 3/11/86.
  4. Newcastle Daily Chronicle 3/11/86.

from simple freehand drawing to oil and water colour painting and included model drawing in outline, geometric, perspective, shading from models and casts, architecture in all its stages, designing in ornament and for manufacturing purposes, the study of figures in life and antique and modelling.<sup>(1)</sup> The range, therefore, covered those subjects which nowadays are classified as fine art but, as might be expected in a manufacturing town, included architecture and design. Examinations were to be held annually, in May, and certificates awarded. Prizes were to be awarded for excellence and good work was also to be forwarded to South Kensington to compete for the Science and Art Department's prizes.<sup>(2)</sup>

The school flourished. In 1887<sup>(3)</sup> it was reported as having 100 pupils enrolled; in 1889<sup>(4)</sup> the number had risen to 182 and thereafter enrolments fluctuated between about 160 and 193<sup>(5)</sup> which it reached in 1902. The school probably took full-time pupils but most of its pupils were part-time, and nearly all the students came from the artisan class.<sup>(6)</sup> At the official opening, Mr. France said that the "school would enable young men to develop what they had acquired before leaving school."<sup>(7)</sup>

At the end of its first year the school had a deficit of £80 and a series of concerts and dramatic performances was

- 
1. Newcastle Daily Chronicle 3/11/86.
  2. IBID.
  3. Daily Leader 6/12/87.
  4. Daily Leader 19/9/90.
  5. Daily Leader 27/11/02.
  6. Newcastle Daily Leader 3/12/99.
  7. Newcastle Daily Leader 5/11/86.

arranged by the secretary to raise funds. Again, in 1890, there was a deficit of £54. 15. 8d but, thereafter, finances were established on a sound basis, as the Town Council gave the school an annual subsidy of approximately £250 out of the excise money.(1)

At first the principal had one assistant teacher, but soon the staff had increased to five assistant masters and one assistant mistress.(2) From the Borough Accounts it is possible to deduce that the main work of the school was done in three classes; a morning class, an afternoon class and an evening class, as by far the greatest part of the income from fees was derived from students attending these classes. There were, however, smaller classes for teachers, in drawing from life, landscape drawing and woodcarving; a special class was also held on a Saturday afternoon.

The quality of the school can be seen from the Principal's reports at the Annual Distribution of Prizes. In 1888, for example, he stated that 93 out of 130 scholars had submitted work to South Kensington and 47 had passed: 4 being marked excellent.(3) By 1895 results had improved; of 163 students, 125, or 72%, were successful in the examination, and 63 of them, or more than 50%, gained first class passes. The

- 
1. N.C. Gateshead Guardian 18/5/92.
  2. IBID.
  3. Newcastle Daily Leader 14/9/88.

principal reported that, in three subjects, design, principles or ornament and advanced shading, there had been no failures; while in another five subjects had only had one failure each. In 1895, 9 students completed the first class D, or teacher's elementary art certificate, while 3 students had gained the Art Teacher's certificate. Obviously the teachers' class was being well attended and achieving good results. In the same year the Science and Art Department inspector said:

"This school is doing really good work. The effort to foster design is a good feature." (1)

In 1893 the school was listed in the Borough Accounts as the Art & Science School; payments to staff for language and shorthand classes are listed, and fees were collected from students for science and for art classes. The amount collected is entered as a composite total, but from the grants earned it is possible to deduce that the science classes must have been very small. Between 1893 - 1898 the highest science grant earned was £2,(2) while, in the same period, the art grant increased from £69. 7. 0d.(3) to £117. 8. 6d.(4) From 1899 onwards, although some science classes are listed, no grants were earned, so obviously the attempt to establish science classes at the school was not a success; probably because the competition from the School Board's

- 
1. N.C. Gateshead Guardian 21/12/95.
  2. Gateshead Borough Accounts 1893, P.122.
  3. IBID.
  4. IBID, 1898.

own long established science classes proved to be too strong.

Although additional rooms were rented next door to the public library, reference was made on several occasions to the fact that the school was really too small. The first time was in 1888 when, at the prize distribution, the Mayor said that the School Board Chairman had told him that school would soon be too small.<sup>(1)</sup> In 1890, while proposing a vote of thanks at a similar function, Mr. France himself wondered whether the Corporation would consider the question of larger premises.<sup>(2)</sup> Perhaps the most significant reference occurred in 1891 when the Mayor said that the Council had received £1,400 from Parliament for Technical Education, but had spent only £154. He wondered what would happen to the rest and said that his own feelings were to let it accumulate, until there was enough to erect a handsome art and science institution in Gateshead.<sup>(3)</sup>

In the event, no new premises were erected, as competing institutions, among them the School Board's own science and art classes, staked their claims to a share of the excise money.

In 1896, the Art School Committee informed the School Board that it was considering offering free tuition, at the school,

- 
1. Newcastle Daily Leader 14/9/88.
  2. Newcastle Daily Leader 19/9/90.
  3. Newcastle Daily Chronicle 2/10/91.

to one boy and one girl from each Board school.(1) The Board was grateful for the suggestion and in October 1897 the scheme commenced.(2) By 1903 60 students from the town's elementary schools were receiving free tuition.(3)

From 1903 onwards the Art School was administered by the Higher Education Sub Committee of the Education Committee. In the next few years the school continued to thrive, but from 1910 onwards its fortunes declined and it was closed in 1912. During its short life the school provided a useful service to the town but, in the end, its proximity to similar institutions in Newcastle and lack of support by Gateshead students forced its closure. No link between the School of Art and Technical College in Gateshead can be found but it fostered an interest in art which was later satisfied by the foundation of the Shipley Art Gallery.

- 
1. S.B.M. Vol.N, P.38.
  2. IBID, P.381.
  3. Newcastle Daily Chronicle 26/11/03.

### CONCLUSION

The School Board's era ended on 1 June 1903. Under the terms of the 1902 Education Act the former Board schools became known as provided schools, while all the remaining Voluntary schools, St. Mary's National, St. Cuthbert's (Lady Vernon's) National, St. Joseph's R.C., St. Oswald's R.C., St. Wilfrid's R.C. and the Wesleyan school<sup>(1)</sup> became non-provided schools. Subject to the provisions of the 1902 Act, all the schools were administered by the newly formed Education Committee of the Town Council. The Higher Grade Organised Science School became the Borough's first secondary school and, like the evening classes, the Science & Art Classes and the School of Art, was henceforward supervised by a Higher Education sub-committee.

The most noteworthy feature of the changeover was its smoothness. At all levels, continuity was achieved; the Clerk, the administrative staff and the teaching staff of the Board all remained as servants of the new authority, while several Board members: Mr. Willson, Mr. Thubron, Mr. Laybourne, Dr. Anderson, Mr. Lumsden, Dr. Green and Mr. Wood were appointed members of the Education Committee.<sup>(2)</sup> The Rev. W. Moore Ede, who had moved to Whitburn, continued his services to education by becoming the

- 
1. In 1909 the boys' department of the Wesleyan school was purchased by the Town Council for £750. Gateshead County Borough Abstract of Accounts 1909, P.111. In 1912 the girls' and infants' departments were also purchased for £2,600. Gateshead County Borough Abstract of Accounts 1912, P.112.
  2. Newcastle Daily Chronicle 15/5/03.

vice-president of Durham County Education Committee.(1)

The Gateshead Board's record was a proud one. First elected in 1870, it opened its first temporary school in 1872, its first permanent one in 1874, and from 1877 provided the lion's share of the elementary school places in Gateshead, in the face of recurrent financial difficulties. In addition, the Board laid the foundations of secondary education, in the Organised Science School, and of further education in the evening classes and Science and Art classes, which were continued by the Higher Education sub-committee and from which, fifty years later, the Gateshead Technical College was to be developed.



APPENDIX NO.1.(ii)

Photograph of an Advertisement by James Charlton, Master of  
the Anchorage School in Gateshead Observer, Vol.I.No.1.

18th November, 1837

# ANCHORAGE SCHOOL, GATESHEAD.

**M**R. JAMES CHARLTON respectfully informs his Friends and the Public, that after the Christmas vacation, he will be able to accommodate Four additional Boarders. Terms £25 per Annum.

## TERMS FOR DAY SCHOLARS.

	<i>Per Quarter.</i>
Reading, .....	£0 10 6
Reading and Writing.....	0 12 6
Reading, Writing, English Grammar, Arithmetic, and Book-keeping by Single Entry.....	0 15 0
The above, with the Latin and Greek Languages, Book-keeping by Double Entry, Mensuration, Gauging, Surveying of Land, Geography with the Use of the Globes, Algebra, Euclid's Ele- ments, and Plane Trigonometry .....	1 1 0
Spherical Trigonometry, Mechanics, Astronomy, Navigation, and the Differential Calculus....	0 10 6

The Classical Department is conducted by the Rev. W. BEWSHER, A. M., of Trinity College, Dublin, and of the Curates of Gateshead.

rect.  
Tea  
con-  
ouse,  
EE-  
efer-  
Boat  
Rot-  
SIDE.  
veral  
GRES,

A  
BASE  
of W  
the B  
they  
repe  
with.  
No  
WA  
B  
select  
Drab

APPENDIX NO.1. (iii)

Photograph of an Advertisement for books published by James  
Charlton in Gateshead Observer, November, 18th 1837.

Lately Published, by **JAMES CHARLTON**, Master of the  
Anchor School, Gateshead.

**1. AN INTRODUCTION TO GEOGRAPHY AND  
THE USE OF THE GLOBES.** Price 3s. 6d. bound.

"This is an excellent Book both for arrangement and information, and we are sure will be the opinion of it into the hands of whatever person it may come. Whether he be Boy or Adult, ignorant or learned, Teacher or Father of a family, the examination and perusal of this little work must prove highly gratifying, as well as peculiarly instructive."—*Newcastle Magazine*.

"Much good sense is shown in selecting and arranging the materials of which this Volume is composed. In point of perspicuity and extent of information it is superior to any of the introductions which we have seen."—*Northern Year Book for 1839*.

**2. ARITHMETICAL TABLES**, with explanatory notes, questions for examination, and extracts from the Acts of Parliament for establishing uniformity of weights and measures. Second edition, price 9d.

**3. The 12th edition of TINWELL'S PRACTICAL ARITHMETIC**, with Book-keeping by Single Entry; corrected and enlarged by the same.

N. B. The 13th edition of this work is now in the press, and will be published in the course of December.

**4. A new edition of THE KEY TO TINWELL'S ARITHMETIC**, adapted to the latest edition of that work. price 5s.

APPENDIX NO.2.  
(Committee of Council on Education Report  
1871-72, P.254)

List of schools under Government Inspection and in Receipt of Parliamentary Grant for the Year ending 31st December, 1871.

1861 Census Table District Number 551			
(A)	(B)	(C)	(D)
Gateshead N.10.	473-12-6	{ 934	519-18-0
Gateshead Bensham St. Cuthberts N.11.	83-15-0	{ 20 198	5- 6-2 111-1-0
Gateshead Friar's Goos, B.6.		163	94-14-0
Gateshead High Fell, N.4.		67	25-23-4
Gateshead Infants and Sunday <sup>Ⓜ</sup>	140-0-0		
Gateshead Low Fell N.2.	166-10-0	171	93-19-0
Gateshead Our Lady and St. Wilfred's <sup>Ⓜ</sup>			
Gateshead St. James' Chapel 11.		{ 214 27	110-8-0 8-7-6
Gateshead St. Joseph's R.2.		{ 428 110	156-4-8 32-11-7
Gateshead W.6.	375-0-0	371	260-17-0

Column A. Name and denomination of school and month when inspection is due.

Column B. Amount of grants for building, enlargement improvement or fixtures.

Column C. Average Attendance (where two numbers occur second denotes evening scholars).

Column D. Annual grants paid within year ending 31 December, 1871.

- N. National Society of Church of England
- B. British and Foreign Society
- W. Wesleyan Methodists' Conference
- R. Roman Catholic Poor School Committee.

### Note

#### 1. For Building or Fixtures

Unless marked  $\text{K}$  (grant from Treasury before the appointment of a Committee of Council on Education) the right of inspection is permanently secured by deed.

#### 2. For Annual Maintenance

In these cases if there has been no grant for building or fixtures, the right of inspection is limited to the continuance of aid.

#### 3. For Books, Maps and Apparatus

These grants have not been made since 1861. The managers receiving them engaged that the school should be open to inspection for seven years. The schools which have received no other grant are distinguished by  $\text{K}$ .

APPENDIX NO.3.(1)

Photograph of List of Gateshead Schools in 1870 in which the  
Ordinary Fee was less than 9d. per week.



APPENDIX NO.3 (11).

Photograph of Table No.1. showing Gateshead Schools in  
1870.



APPENDIX NO. 4.

(Compiled from Triennial Reports  
and Minutes).

MEMBERS OF GATESHEAD SCHOOL BOARD.1st Board elected 28 November 1870.

Rev. Henry Riley.  
 Rev. Samuel Atkinson.  
 Ven. Edward Prest. (Vice Chairman).  
 W.G. Montgomery Esq.  
 John Lucas Esq.  
 George Lucas Esq.  
 Henry Christian Allhusen Esq.  
 William Brown Esq.  
 George Thornton France Esq.  
 Robert Robey Redmayne Esq.  
 Robert Stirling Newall Esq. (Chairman).

John M. Redmayne Esq. (November 1871) succeeded Mr. Allhusen.

2nd Board elected 22 November 1873.

Alfred Allhusen Esq.  
 Ralph Bewick Esq. Retired August 1876.  
 Dr. R.J. Banning M.D. J.P.  
 George Thornton France Esq.  
 Rev. Joseph Ketley. Resigned September 1875.  
 John Lucas Esq.  
 W.G. Montgomery Esq. Resigned November 1875.  
 Ven. Edward Prest. (Chairman).  
 Rev. Henry Riley. (Vice Chairman).  
 Joseph Wilson Swan Esq.  
 Thomas Wilson Esq.

George Charlton Esq., J.P. replaced Rev. J. Ketley.

3rd Board elected November 1876. \*

Dr. R.J. Banning M.D., J.P.  
 T.W. Dance Esq.  
 W.B. Elsdon Esq. Resigned July 1879.  
 George Thornton France Esq.  
 John Lucas Esq. Resigned April 1879.  
 Ven. Edward Prest. (Chairman).  
 Dr. C.S. Redmond.  
 Rev. Henry Riley. (Vice Chairman). Died January 1877.  
 Joseph Wilson Swan Esq.  
 Samuel Thompson Esq.  
 Thomas Wilson Esq. Resigned March 1878.

3rd Board elected November 1876 (contd).

Rev. A.F. Riley. (June 1879) Succeeded Mr. Lucas.  
 Rev. J.A. Wilson. (April 1877-June 1879) succeeded  
 Rev. H. Riley, in turn replaced by Rev. P.T. Matthews  
 (August 1879).  
 W.J. Pattinson Esq. (May 1878) Succeeded Mr. Wilson.

- \* Education Act 1876 permitted School Boards to fill up casual vacancies without holding an election.

4th Board elected November 1879.

Ven. Edward Prest. (Chairman). Resigned July 1881.  
 George Thornton France Esq. (Vice Chairman).  
 J.G. Angus Esq.  
 Dr. R.J. Banning M.D., J.P. Resigned February 1880.  
 J.D. Caris J.P.  
 Rev. P.T. Matthews.  
 W.G. Montgomery Esq.  
 Robert Rankin Esq.  
 Dr. C.S. Redmond. Resigned September 1882.  
 Rev. A.F. Riley.  
 George Rule Esq.

Rev. W. Moore Ede. (September 1881) succeeded Ven. Edward Prest.  
 H. Carrick Esq. (March 1880) succeeded Dr. Banning.

5th Board elected November 1882.

James Stainthorpe Esq.  
 George Rule Esq.  
 Rev. P.T. Matthews.  
 Rev. Samuel Atkinson.  
 W.G. Montgomery Esq. Died 1884.  
 Rev. A.F. Riley.  
 John Lucas Esq.  
 Gerhard Lampen Esq.  
 George Thornton France. (Chairman).  
 Rev. W. Moore Ede.  
 Robert Ranken Esq. (Vice Chairman).  
 J. Burns Esq. March 1884. succeeded Mr. Montgomery.

6th Board elected November 1885.

Miss E.L. Connell.	
Rev. P.T. Matthews.	
Rev. W.W. Phillipson.	Resigned December 1887.
John Lucas Esq.	
Rev. D. Robb.	Resigned July 1887.
Rev. W. Moore Ede.	
George Rule Esq.	
George Thornton France Esq.	(Chairman).
Robert Ranken Esq.	(Vice Chairman).
	Seat declared vacant October 1887.
Rev. Samuel Atkinson.	
Rev. A.F. Riley.	

W. Telford Esq. (March 1888) succeeded Rev. W.W. Phillipson.  
 T. Davidson Esq. (November 1887) succeeded Rev. D. Robb.  
 W.H. Renwick Esq. ( ? ) succeeded Mr. Ranken.

7th Board elected November 1888.

Rev. Samuel Atkinson.	
Miss E.L. Connell.	
Rev. W. Moore Ede.	
George Thornton France Esq.	(Chairman). Retired February 1891.
Rev. P.T. Matthews.	
Dr. C.S. Redmond.	
Rev. A.F. Riley.	(Vice Chairman).
George Rule Esq.	
J. Thubron Esq.	
W.C. Tyrie Esq.	
W. deL Willson Esq.	

Charles J. Richardson. ( ? ) succeeded Mr. France.

8th Board elected November 1891.

Robert Affleck Esq.	
Rev. J.G. Binney.	
Miss E.L. Connell.	(Vice Chairman).
Rev. W. Moore Ede.	Resigned.
Rev. P.T. Matthews.	
Dr. C.S. Redmond.	
Charles J. Richardson Esq.	(Chairman). Resigned.
Rev. A.F. Riley.	
George Rule Esq.	
John Thubron Esq.	

8th Board elected November 1891. (contd).

Rev. A.R. Stogdon.	Resigned.
Rev. Canon M. Greene.	succeeded Rev.P.T.Matthews.
W.C. Tyrie Esq.	succeeded Rev.A.F.Riley.
Thomas Lumsden Esq.	succeeded Rev.A.R.Stogdon.

9th Board elected November 1894.

W. deL. Willson Esq.	
James Ford Esq.	
John Thubron Esq.	
George Rule Esq.	(Vice Chairman).
Thomas Lumsden Esq.	
Mrs. H. Kempthorne.	Resigned.
Rev. Canon W. Moore Ede.	(Chairman).
Robert Affleck Esq.	
Rev. E.A. Welch.	
Rev. Canon M. Greene.	
Rev. A.H. Patterson.	succeeded Mrs.Kempthorne.
Rev. H.H. Birley.	succeeded Rev. E.A. Welch.

10th Board elected November 1897.

(Raised to 15 members i.e. maximum permitted by  
Elementary Education Act of 1870).

John Thubron Esq.	
W. deL. Willson Esq.	Resigned.
Rev. J.G. Birney.	"
Rev. J.A. Kershaw.	
Rev. Canon M. Greene.	
Rev. Canon W. Moore Ede.	(Chairman).
James Ford Esq.	
S.J. Leybourne Esq.	
Robert Affleck Esq.	
Rev. H.H. Birley.	
George Rule Esq.	(Vice Chairman).
Rev. F.L. Cope.	
Rev. A.H. Patterson.	
Thomas Lumsden Esq.	
Francis Drummond Esq. *	
Dr. A. Green.	succeeded Mr. Willson.
E. Bone Esq.	succeeded Rev.J.G. Birney,
he later died and was replaced by Rev. D.P. Packer.	

\* 1st Socialist member of School Board.

11th Board elected November 1900.

John Thubron Esq.	(Vice Chairman).
Rev. Canon W. Moore Ede.	(Chairman).
Robert Bowron Esq.	
Dr. Robert Anderson.	
Rev. J.B. Slack.	
Rev. H.H. Birley.	resigned March 1901.
Rev. Canon M. Greene.	
Thomas Lumsden Esq.	
Rev. Martin Brennan.	
Rev. A.H. Patterson.	
Francis Drummond Esq.	
Mrs. Mabel C. Green.	
Dr. A. Green.	
John G. Wood Esq.	
Rev. Joseph A. Kershaw.	resigned May 1901.
Rev. A.H. Hunt (May-Sept. 1901)	succeeded Rev. H.H. Birley;
in September he was replaced, in turn, by Rev. J.A. Kempthorne.	
Professor E.B. Harding. (September 1901)	succeeded Rev. J.A. Kershaw.

APPENDIX NO. 5.

Compiled from S. B. Minutes.

GATESHEAD SCHOOL BOARD PERMANENT OFFICIALSClerk, Solicitor and Accountant

1. Joseph Willis Swinburne, (Town Clerk of Gateshead) appointed 15th December, 1870; resigned 9th April, 1873.

2. William Hylton Dyer Longstaffe, (Retired Solicitor) appointed 9th April, 1873. Continued to hold appointments until 8th September, 1875. From that date, until 14th February, 1878, Mr. Longstaffe was Clerk and Solicitor; he continued to act as solicitor only until December, 1899 when he was succeeded by Mr. H. Swinburne, son of J. W. Swinburne, Esq.,

3. Edwyn John Harding, (formerly headmaster of Sheriff Hill School). Appointed Accountant 8th September, 1875 and Clerk/Accountant 14th February, 1875. Mr. Harding was the first Clerk/Accountant to be appointed full-time to the post and the appointment is a recognition of the importance and the amount of the work devolving upon the Clerk. Mr. Harding continued in the office until 1903, and remained as Secretary to the Education Committee until 1908.

(1)

Treasurer

1. Joseph B. Pearson, 11 January, 1871 - June 1873.
2. Edwin Walter Last, 11 June, 1873 - October 1874.

---

(1) With the exception of the last all treasurers were Managers of the National Provincial Bank, Gateshead, where the School Board Account was kept until June, 1901.

3. Ralph Denston Edwards, 14 October, 1874 - 13 June, 1881.
4. Joseph Jackson, 13 June, 1881 - 14 November, 1883
5. ? Mackenzie, 14 November, 1883 - 13 July, 1892.
6. C. F. Lloyd,, 13 July, 1892 - 12 June 1895.
7. John Ash, 12 June, 1895 - 12 June, 1901
8. Charles James Spence, (Manager Hodgkin, Barnet Spence, Pease & Co., Bankers) 12 June, 1901 until School Board handed over to new Education Committee in 1903.

#### Clerk of Works

1. John E. Hindson, 12 March, 1873 deceased January, 1874.
2. William Edington, 11 February, 1874 - 11 May, 1898
3. William Flynn, 27 May, 1898 until School Board handed over to new Education Committee in 1903

#### Summoning Officers

1. Joseph Gibson, 26 August, 1872; dismissed 9 April 1879.
2. Ralph Renwick, 20 July, 1874
3. George Robinson, 21 April 1879
4. John Taylor, 11 July, 1883

The three last named officials all continued to serve the Board until 1903.

APPENDIX NO.6

REPLIES TO THE EDUCATION DEPARTMENT'S LETTER (FORM NO.86)  
DATED 20.12.1870

S.B.M. Vol.A. P.48

REQUISITIONREPLIES

1. The number of children within the municipal limits for whom means of elementary education should be provided:

(a) between ages 3 - 5 1050 children.

(b) between ages 5 - 13 6991 children.

2. The provision to meet the requirements of these children which the Board considers to be

(a) already supplied by efficient schools, or 2697 places.

(b) likely to be supplied by schools either contemplated or in the course of erection. 1414 places.

(c) Accommodation in existing private adventure schools which prior to inspection by a competent inspector is estimated at:

1000 places

TOTAL 5111 places

3. The deficiencies (if any) in the supply of efficient elementary education for the Borough as shown by comparing (1) and (2) above.

	Deficiency
Between 3-5	328
5-13	3602
TOTAL	<u>3930</u>

REQUISITION

4. By means of what schools the Board would propose to remedy and supply the deficiency.
5. The precise localities in which such schools would be needed.

REPLIES

(But subject to abatement in respect of approved private schools).

By 5 schools or groups of schools

- (1) A school or groups of schools at a point or points near to PARK LANE for about 1300 children.
- (2) A school or group of schools at a point immediately south of GATESHEAD CEMETERY for about 1050.
- (3) A school at a point south of COLLIERY COTTAGES, SHERIFF HILL for about 500.
- (4) A school or a group of schools at a point near to PRINCE CONSORT ROAD for about 675.
- (5) A school at a point immediately east of the Water Company's pumping engine between ASKEW ROAD and WINDMILL HILLS for about 400.

I SCHOOLS SUPPLYING EFFICIENT ELEMENTARY EDUCATION

- (a) Schools in receipt of annual grant from the Education Department.

Abbot Memorial  
 St. Mary's inc. EDISON Infants  
 High Fell Infant  
 Low Fell National  
 Lady Vernon National  
 St. Joseph's R.C.  
 Wesleyan  
 Wrekenton Infants

REQUISITIONREPLIES

- (b) Schools not receiving such grants but which will be considered as public elementary schools and will seek annual aid.
- (c) Schools which will not seek annual aid.
- (d) Private adventure schools to which no annual grant can be made.

Melbourne Street New Connexion  
Methodists

and

Nelson Street Primitive Methodists  
fall under one or other of these  
headings.

(1)

The table No.1 contains a list of these schools - the total accommodation is adequate for 1449 but those which are prima facie treated as not unsatisfactory have accommodation for 1,000.

II SCHOOLS NOT SUPPLYING EFFICIENT EDUCATION

It is assumed that private adventure schools with accommodation for 449 do not supply efficient education.

III REQUIRED TO COMPLETE THE SCHOOL SUPPLY OF THE BOROUGH

Already fully stated in answers to question 4 and 5 above.

---

(1) See Appendix 3 (ii)

APPENDIX NO. 7.

(S.B.M. Vol.L. P.207  
19 March 1894).

Terms for the takeover of Rochester Street School by the School Board.

1. The Board should occupy the premises for the purpose of a Day School on a yearly tenancy, that is to say, that the tenancy may cease on the first of any month after the examination of the school by H.M. Inspector provided that the managers shall have received notice not less than six months previously.
2. The Managers of the school shall maintain and keep in order the exterior of the premises and the School Board shall likewise maintain and keep in reasonable repair the interior of the premises.
3. The Board shall pay for the use of the premises £70 in the first year and £80 each succeeding year.
4. The Board shall have full and free use of all desks, cupboards apparatus and library and similar articles which are at present in use in the school, but an inventory shall be made and signed by both parties and the Board, at the termination of the agreement, shall account for the articles enumerated, after allowing for reasonable wear and tear.
5. The Board shall accept as their servant the present caretaker and pay as wages for cleaning the sum of £20 per annum and in case any future caretaker should be appointed by the Managers of the school and the School Board shall concur in the appointment.
6. All fuel for the use of the school and caretaker's cottage shall be supplied and paid for by the Board and all gas consumed in the said premises shall be paid for by the present managers.
7. That all the teachers at present employed in the said school be retained as teachers under the board, and that such teachers be paid as at present until the end of the year.

8. The school shall be taken over by the Board as from 1st April 1894. All outgoings and expenses incurred up to that date shall be defrayed by the present managers and for this purpose they shall be entitled to receive from the School Board  $\frac{5}{12}$ ths of all grants paid by the Education Department and the Science and Art Department on account of the School Year ending 31 October, 1894.

APPENDIX NO. 8.  
(Compiled from Triennial Reports 1876-1900)

Comparison of Average Attendance Figures in Board and  
Voluntary Schools in Gateshead 1867-1900 and 1903

Year	AVERAGE ATTENDANCE		Total	No. by which Board Schools exceeded or fell short of Voluntary.
	VOLUNTARY	BOARD		
1867	1,521	-	1,521	-
1868	2,024	-	2,024	-
1869	2,519	-	2,519	-
1870	2,660	-	2,660	-2,660
1871	2,625	-	2,625	-2,625
1872	2,639	-	2,639	-2,639
1873	3,073	72	3,145	-3,071
1874	2,858	217	3,075	-2,641
1875	2,684	1,012	3,696	-1,672
1876	2,796	2,057	4,853	- 739
1877	2,585	2,605	5,190	+ 20
1878	2,862	3,535	6,397	+ 673
1879	2,948	4,045	6,993	+1,097
1880	2,999	4,852	7,851	+1,853
1881	3,258	5,396	8,694	+2,138
1882	3,330	5,721	9,051	+2,391
1883	3,114	6,447	9,561	+3,333
1884	3,283	7,275	10,558	+3,992

Year	AVERAGE ATTENDANCE		Total	No. by which Board Schools exceeded or fell short of Voluntary.
	VODUNTARY	BOARD		
1885	3,354	7,483	10,837	+ 4,129
1886	3,238	7,649	10,887	+ 4,411
1887	3,521	8,032	11,553	+ 4,511
1888	3,672	8,177	11,849	+ 4,505
1889	3,488	8,597	12,085	+ 5,109
1890	3,652	8,385	12,037	+ 4,733
1891	3,917	8,711	12,628	+ 4,794
1892	4,097	9,458	13,555	+ 5,361
1893	4,103	10,587	14,690	+ 6,484
1894	3,966	11,087	15,053	+ 7,121
1895	3,445	11,433	14,878	+ 7,988
1896	3,215	12,686	15,901	+ 9,471
1897	3,102	12,964	16,066	+ 9,862
1898	3,093	13,418	16,511	+ 10,325
1899	3,136	13,478	16,614	+ 10,342
1900	3,150	13,549	16,699	+ 10,399
1903	3,596	16,392	20,988	+ 12,796

In 1880 the comparative attendance figures for England and Wales were :-

Board	769,252
-------	---------

Voluntary	1,981,684
-----------	-----------

so that the situation in Gateshead was different from the overall national pattern. Even by 1901 when the national figures were much closer

Board	2,239,375
-------	-----------

Voluntary	2,492,536
-----------	-----------

the Voluntary Schools still had a higher average attendance, whereas in Gateshead the reverse was still true. After 1877 the Gateshead Board Schools had higher attendance figures than the Voluntary Schools and continued to do so until the Board system ended.

APPENDIX NO. 9(1)

GATESHEAD SCHOOL BOARD INCOME 1871 - 1900

(COMPILED FROM TRIENNIAL REPORTS)

YR ending Sept.29th	Grants from Committee of Council on Ed. 1	Rating Authority 2	Fees 3	Sale of Books 4	Loans Raised 5	Drawing Grant 6	Miscellaneous 7	Technical Instruction Grant & Fees <sup>8</sup>	Total Receipts 9
1871	-	400. 0. 0.	-	-	-	-	-		400. 0. 0.
1872	-	450. 0. 0.	-	-	-	-	-		450. 0. 0.
1873	30. 3. 0.	750. 0. 0.	77. 9. 6.	-	5283. 0. 0.	-	5. 4. 3.		6145.16. 9.
1874	70.14. 0.	1500. 0. 0.	175. 5. 5.	8.17. 9.	5775. 0. 0.	-	-		7259.17. 2.
1875	455. 0. 0.	3400. 0. 0.	790.12. 1.	76.14. 7.	3352. 0. 0.	-	2.10. 0.		8076.16. 8.
1876	1635. 8. 8.	5800. 0. 0.	1211.16. 5.	123. 9. 7.	9686. 0. 0.	-	56. 6. 0.		18513. 0. 8.
1877	2025.19. 2.	3500. 0. 0.	1192. 3. 2.	140. 4. 0.	9199. 0. 0.	45.16. 0.	86.18. 9.		16190. 1. 1.
1878	2534.13. 4.	4583. 6. 8.	1591. 8. 0.	219. 4. 4.	20059. 0. 0.	61. 4. 0.	152. 8. 9.		29201. 5. 1.
1879	3287. 6. 3.	7216.13. 4.	1864. 0.11.	198.19. 1.	9827. 0. 0.	85.15. 0.	141.18. 5.		22671.13. 0.
1880 Onwards	Grants from C of C on Ed. and S & A Dept. Cols. 1 & 6 Amal.					Day Industrial School			
1880	4044.10. 8.	8000. 0. 0.	2335.15. 4.	271. 4. 3.	6025. 0. 0.	-	64. 7. 3.		20740.17. 6.
1881	4841. 8. 4.	8000. 0. 0.	2860.11. 5.	290. 3. 4.	5000. 0. 0.	154. 9. 8.	115. 5. 6.		21081.18. 3.
1882	4975.18.10.	8000. 0. 0.	2878. 3. 5.	370.10. 0.	5000. 0. 0.	455.19.11.	133. 6. 0.		21813.18. 2.
1883	5900. 8. 9.	8000. 0. 0.	3346.14. 8.	449.15. 1.	3477. 0. 0.	658. 6. 9.	139.17. 0.		21972. 2. 3.

## APPENDIX NO. 9(i) (Contd.)

R ending sept.29th	1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9
1884	6969. 6. 5.	9200. 0. 0.	4006.18. 5.	356.14.11.	3326. 0. 0.	709.18. 5.	99. 8. 9.		24668. 6.11.
1885	7660.11. 0.	11000. 0. 0.	4589.11. 9.	402. 2. 0.	500. 0. 0.	1178. 6.10.	256.16. 1.		25587. 7. 8.
1886	8460. 0. 4.	9812. 4. 3.	4811. 6. 3.	428.15. 1.	354. 0. 0.	1192. 9. 8.	167.17. 6.		25226.13. 1.
1887	8735. 4. 3.	10000. 0. 0.	5309. 1. 3.	428.15. 9.	837. 0. 0.	1204.10. 1.	124.12. 7.		26639. 3.11.
1888	9060. 5. 9.	9000. 0. 0.	5376. 4. 5.	440. 9.11.	5246. 0. 0.	1211. 1. 0.	173. 0. 5.		30507. 1. 6.
1889	9577.19. 0.	9299. 5. 6.	5634.16. 6.	437. 9. 9.	2465. 0. 0.	1824. 3. 2.	125. 7. 4.		29364. 1. 3.
1890	9470.15.10.	9500. 0. 0.	5753. 0. 0.	403.19.10.	754. 0. 0.	2097.11. 8.	82.15. 2.		28122. 2. 6.
1891	10031. 6. 8.	9800. 0. 0.	5583.10. 7.	470.18.11.	8087. 0. 0.	2107. 2. 7.	110. 9. 0.		36190. 7. 9.
1892 Onwards			Cols. 3 & 4 Amalgamated	FEE GRANTS					
1892	11082.17. 8.	13500. 0. 0.	2223.15. 0.	4140. 8. 1.	5676. 0. 0.	1896. 9. 3.	432. 9. 0.	-	38951.19.10.
1893	12504. 6.10.	12000. 0. 0.	2321. 6. 9.	5597. 1. 2.	1500. 0. 0.	542. 1.11.	367.14. 4.	631. 3.11.	35463.14.11.
1894	13376. 0. 3.	11500. 0. 0.	2186.10. 7.	5646. 9.11.	22650. 0. 0.	365. 0.11.	257.17. 0.	435. 2. 2.	56417. 1. 8.
1895	14278. 3. 0.	13000. 0. 0.	2182.11.10.	5610.19. 9.	33228. 0. 0.	286. 9. 9.	337. 3.11.	276. 5. 0.	69199.13. 3.
1896	15012. 6. 8.	14500. 0. 0.	2271. 5. 0.	6198.12. 7.	1100. 0. 0.	16. 2. 5.	2883.12. 8.	231. 6. 6.	42213. 5.10.
1897	16533.10. 5.	16600. 0. 0.	2178. 1. 7.	6264. 5.10.	7600. 0. 0.	15. 0.	1168.11.10.	176. 2. 9.	50521. 7. 5.
1898	21181. 1. 0.	18500. 0. 0.	2238. 2. 3.	6654.10. 6.	5000. 0. 0.	-	529. 4. 2.	195. 7. 5.	54298. 5. 4.
1899	18856. 9. 9.	17500. 0. 0.	2055.16. 3.	6527. 5. 8.	7977. 0. 0.	-	647. 7. 8.	142.12. 3.	53706.11. 7.
1900	20653.19. 4.	18700. 0. 0.	2037.10. 7.	7108.17. 6.	14464. 0. 0.	-	1153. 0.10.	376.10. 0.	64493.18. 3.

## APPENDIX NO. 9(ii)

## GATESHEAD SCHOOL BOARD EXPENDITURE 1871 - 1900

(COMPILED FROM TRIENNIAL REPORTS)<sup>(1)</sup>

YR ending Sept.29th	ADMINISTRATION			4 Technical Instruction	5 Maintenance of Schools *	6 Industrial Schools	7 Capital Charges	8 Repayment & interest of Loans	9 Other Expenses	10 Total Expenditure
	1 Election Expenses	2 Salaries of Officers	3 Legal & other Admin expenses				Erection of Buildings & Purchase of Land			
1871	197. 8. 2.		33.18.11.						39. 7. 0.	270. 4. 1.
1872	6.14. 5.	210. 0. 0.	45. 3. 1.		19.17. 6.		11. 9. 1.		7.14. 4.	298. 9. 4.
1873	-	409. 4. 0.	111. 0. 6.		401.10. 8.		5477. 8. 6.		5. 0. 0.	6401.12. 9.
1874	325. 0. 4.	300.13. 0.	120. 5.11.		587.13. 7.	19. 5. 0.	5976. 7. 4.	294. 8. 1.	36. 6. 5.	7661. 4. 0.
1875	-	351.16. 8.	195. 8. 4.		3718.15.10.	-	4110. 2. 8.	606.15. 1.	69. 0. 6.	9068. 8. 2.
1876	7.10. 0.	585. 3. 4.	223.15. 3.		4714.11. 2.	-	7424.19. 0.	777.18. 4.	67.18. 4.	13805.19. 0.
1877	8.17. 6.	524. 5. 4.	154.17. 3.		5819. 0. 4.	138.10. 0.	9710.11. 0.	1425. 0. 0.	2707. 4.10*	20637. 4.11.
1878	-	644. 6. 0.	362.15. 5.		8590.12.10.	221.12.11.	16181.13. 9.	1973. 0. 9.	18.15. 8.	28637.13. 9.
1879	-	596. 5.10.	1315. 7. 1.		8467. 5.11.	205.17. 6.	9125. 3. 5.	3381. 0. 0.	286. 3.11.	22200. 0. 7.
1880	265.19.10.	599.15. 5.	261.18. 7.		9141.11. 0.	237. 3. 6.	5574. 1. 3.	3567. 0. 0.	129. 0.10.	19695. 7. 6.
1881	-	608. 5. 6.	315.13. 1.		9690. 9. 5.	988.10. 7.	5353. 0. 0.	3750. 0.10.	47.17.11.	20747. 0. 8.
1882	-	683. 2. 4.	269. 4. 7.		11443. 9. 1.	1232. 8. 8.	5971.15. 3.	4088. 7. 5.	40.15. 3.	23699.11.10.
1883	294.11. 5.	769.13. 0.	341. 5. 7.		13348.10. 8.	1379.14. 9.	2909.10. 2.	4370.17.11.	11. 4. 6.	23414. 3. 6.
1884	-	807. 5. 6.	355.16. 3.		14212.18. 1.	1494. 8.11.	2495.16. 6.	4548. 5. 3.	-	23914.10. 6.
1885	-	837.18. 4.	352. 5. 4.		14784.15. 7.	1949. 0. 9.	903. 4. 3.	4549. 5. 9.	-	23376.10. 0.
1886	312. 4. 3.	848. 8. 0.	270.17. 1.		16098. 0. 8.	1670. 1. 9.	541.10. 3.	4716.16. 8.	-	24457.18. 8.

APPENDIX NO. 9(ii) (Contd.)

Ending pt.29th	1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10
1887	-	856. 5. 6.	454. 0. 5.		16386. 6. 7.	1603. 8. 6.	2438. 4. 6.	4475.10. 7.	-	26213.16. 1.
1888	-	927.19. 4.	318.17.10.		17024. 6.11.	1662.18. 1.	5298.10.11.	4645.14. 2.	-	29878. 7. 3.
1889	299. 5. 6.	940.17. 8.	377. 2. 9.		19084.16. 9.	2221. 5.10.	1629.13. 4.	4895.17.11.	-	29448.19. 9.
1890	-	968.15. 4.	471.12. 5.		19568. 4.11.	2549.17. 2.	24. 9. 4.	4711.11.11.	-	28294.11. 1.
1891	-	1003.11.10.	377.16. 4.		20372. 8. 8.	2276.14. 0.	9607.11. 6.	4633. 7. 7.	-	38271. 3. 9.
1892	329.16.10.	1015. 5. 4.	461.16. 6.		22000. 5. 7.	2234.13. 9.	4531.16. 7.	5026. 8. 3.	-	35600. 2.10.
1893	-	1035. 4. 0.	382.17. 4.	421.17. 5.	23163.13. 7.	1021. 4.11.	2253.14. 3.	5192.12. 3.	-	33471. 3. 9.
1894	-	1060. 6.10.	434. 1. 2.	485.13. 5.	25387. 4. 4.	903. 4.11.	18972.17. 7.	5424. 5. 1.	-	52667.13. 4.
1895	335. 3. 8.	1085.10.10.	314.12. 7.	484. 5. 0.	28252.10.10.	744.18. 8.	21743.15. 2.	6951.12.10.	271. 1.10.	60183.11. 5.
1896	-	1129.17. 8.	877. 1.10.	389.18. 2.	31097.18. 1.	109.17.10.	17875. 6. 7.	7021. 2. 2.	144. 4.10.	58645. 7. 2.
1897	-	1203. 3. 6.	374.16. 2.	387. 9. 1.	32561.17. 4.	407.11. 7.	6425.16. 3.	7081. 2. 0.	136. 6. 0.	48578. 1.11.
1898	299. 3.11.	1191.15. 8.	669. 9.11.	307. 1. 7.	33171. 9.10.	511.19. 3.	9615.13. 5.	7230.17. 4.	533.13. 4.	53531. 4. 3.
1899	-	1298. 8. 7.	552.11.10.	379.11. 6.	34838. 6. 5.	572.11.10.	6242.12. 6.	7488. 9.10.	849.16. 0.	52222. 8. 6.
1900	-	1336. 8. 4.	456. 3. 7.	584. 4. 2.	38090. 4. 6.	668. 8.10.	13093. 2. 5.	8839. 9. 3.	1166.14. 9.	64234.15.10.

NOTES: (1) The above account of School Board Expenditure has been presented in the form used in the Triennial Reports from 1882 onwards, although from 1871 - 1879 certain items were subdivided as follows:

- (a) Col. 3 was listed as "Printing Posting and Office Charges" and as "Legal Expenses"
- (b) Col. 5 was listed as "Salaries of Teachers", "Books, Stationery and Apparatus", "Rent, Rates, Taxes and Insurance", "Purchases and Repair of Furniture and Cleaning", "Fuel and Light", and "Repairs to Buildings"
- (c) Col. 7 was listed as "Erection, Addition and Alteration to Buildings", and "Purchase of Land"
- (d) Col. 8 was listed as "Repayment of Loans" and "Interest on Loans"
- (e) Col. 9 was listed as "Fees Paid for Duties Sec 25" and "Other Expenses"

\* Includes expenditure incurred on temporary schools

+ Purchase of School Board Offices

## APPENDIX NO. 9 (111)

## Gateshead School Board

Table of Loans 1872 - 1 June 1903.

(from Gateshead Borough Accounts 31 March, 1904 P.113).

Building.	Accm.	Total Loan.
Prior St.	1,341	£ 13,148. 7. 6
Alexandra Rd.	1,121	10,692. -- --
Sheriff Hill.	500	6,928.10. --
Redheugh.	800	12,423. 8.10
Sunderland Road.	1,050	19,425.13.8
Grant Street.	200	1,196. -- --
Low Fell.	990	14,990. -- --
Wrekenton.	120	5,841. -- --
Windmill Hills )	701	11,614. -- --
& Industrial School )	100	
Oakwellgate.	789	8,848. -- --
South Street (Durham Rd).	910	7,128. -- --
Askew Rd.	837	7,586. -- --
Ellison became )	(161)	7,201. -- --
Nun's Lane. )	470	
Victoria.	1,080	14,612. -- --
Higher Grade (Whitehall Rd).	1,020	11,926. -- --
Shipcote.	1,050	13,368. -- --
Brighton Avenue.	1,275	19,025. -- --
Higher Grade (Durham Rd).	540	13,517. -- --
Rose Street.	976	16,203. 3. 6

Building.	Accm.	Total Loan.
Pipewellgate.	-	£ 900. -- -
Offices.	-	7,203. -- -
Chester Place Site.	-	5,160. -- -
King Edward Site.	-	2,600. -- -
Roseville Site.	-	3,112. -- -
Old Durham Rd. Site.	-	2,400. -- -
Carr Hill.	-	490. -- -
Kelvin Grove School (near completion).	-	19,087. -- 7

Total Loans contracted by

the School Board up to 1 June, 1903. £256,625. 4. 1

Total Loans outstanding at

1 June, 1903. £200,161.11. 3

Total Loans repaid by School Board.

£ 56,483.12.10

APPENDIX NO.10

Amount of Precept paid to School Board from Rates and Rate per £, 1872-1903.  
(Compiled from Abstract of Borough Accounts 1887, P.91 and Borough Accounts 1904, Pages 134 and 136.)

Year ending 31 August.	Precept	Rate in the £
1872	£ 850-0-0d.	2d.
1873	£ 750-0-0d.	2d.
1874	£ 1,500-0-0d.	3d.
1875	£ 3,400-0-0d.	6d.
1876	£ 5,300-0-0d.	7d.
1877	£3,666-13-4d.	6d.
1878	£4,333-0-0d.	6d.
1879 (7 months to 25 March, 1879)	£ 4,200-0-0d.	5d.
1880 (Year ending 25 March)	£ 8,800-0-0d.	11d.
1881	£ 8,200-0-0d.	1/-d.
1882	£8,300-0-0d.	1/-d.
1883	£ 8,500-0-0d.	10d.
1884	£ 8,000-0-0d.	10d.
1885	£ 9,500-0-0d.	1/-d.
1886	£ 9,812-4-3d.	1/-d.
1887	£ 9,500-0-0d.	1/-d.
1888	£ 9,500-0-0d.	1/-d.
1889	£ 9,299-5-6d.	11d.

Year ending 35 March.	Precept.	Rate in the £.
1890	£ 9,00-0-0d.	10d.
1891	£ 9,800-0-0d.	10d.
1892 (Year ending 31 March)	£11,500-0-0d.	11d.
1893	£12,500-0-0d.	1/2d.
1894	£12,000-0-0d.	1/-d.
1895	£12,500-0-0d.	1/-d.
1896	£13,500-0-0d.	1/-d.
1897	£15,500-0-0d.	1/1d.
1898	£17,500-0-0d.	1/3d.
1899	£16,600-0-0d.	1/1d.
1900	£17,700-0-0d.	1/2d.
1901	£20,000-0-0d.	1/2d.
1902	£22,400-0-0d.	1/5d.
1903	£25,500-0-0d.	1/6d.
Two months ended 31 May 1903	£14,000-0-0d.	Proposal of 1/6d. rate for year.

On 1 June, 1903 the School Board handed over to its successor £3,983-15-11d.

APPENDIX NO. 11 (a).S.B.M. Vol. C. P.441.

TO THE HONOURABLE THE COMMONS OF GREAT  
BRITAIN AND IRELAND, IN PARLIAMENT ASSEMBLED.

THE HUMBLE PETITION OF THE SCHOOL BOARD OF THE  
 BOROUGH OF GATESHEAD.

SHEWETH :

That the School Board of Gateshead was elected under the "Elementary Education Act, 1870."

That the School Board of Gateshead has submitted proposals to the Education Department for the Erection of School Buildings to accommodate 5780 children, and that the Education Department has sanctioned the provision of this amount.

That the "Elementary Education Act, 1870," granted facilities for borrowing money from the Public Works Loan Commissioners at  $3\frac{1}{2}$  per centum per annum, the repayment of principal and interest to be spread over a term not exceeding 50 years.

That to carry out the work of School provision the Board has already, with the assent of the Department, borrowed a Sum of £60,500, and that it will still require a further Sum of £15,000 in the course of the next two years or thereabouts, independently of the Sum required for future Schools, which will be rendered necessary by the natural increase of population.

That the board has also with the assent of the Home Department, established a Day Industrial School, and is empowered to borrow money on capital account for the above purpose, which sum to be borrowed is not included in the sum set out above.

That your Petitioners have seen that a Bill to amend the Acts relating to the Public Works Loan Commissioners has been introduced by Her Majesty's Government into your Honourable House, which will require, among other things, a higher rate of interest to be paid, even when the number of years over which the repayment is to be spread is reduced to thirty years.

That the Board already finds that the repayments and interest amount to a serious sum yearly, and that, under these circumstances, the School Board of Gateshead will find its work seriously delayed and embarrassed, and might through inability to make the requisite provision, be declared a Board in default.

Wherefore, your Petitioners humbly pray that your Honourable House will be pleased to amend the aforesaid Bill, and to except the School Board of Gateshead from the operation of clause 2, which requires a higher rate of interest than that which is charged in accordance with the "Elementary Education Act, 1870."

And your Petitioners will ever pray.

Given under the common Seal of the said School Board of the Borough of Gateshead, this 12th day of March, 1879.

9. That the amount specified under paragraph six, bears interest at the rate of  $3\frac{1}{2}$  per centum per annum.

10. That under the new Rules of the Public Works Loan Commissioners the sum specified under paragraph seven, bears interest at  $4\frac{1}{4}$  per cent.

11. That the amount outstanding and due to the Public Works Loan Commissioners, on 1st January last, was £62,718:18:5d., in addition to the sum (not fully advanced) of £12,462 referred to in paragraph 7.

12. That the Elementary Education Act, 1870 allows School Boards the option of repaying Loans borrowed under the sanction of the Education Department either by equal annual instalments to include both principal and interest, or by repaying one-fiftieth of the principal yearly, and interest upon the amount remaining unpaid.

13. That the School Board of the Borough of Gateshead have hitherto adopted the method of repaying one-fiftieth of the principal yearly.

14. That the said School Board are now desirous of altering the method of repaying Loans and desire to repay them by equal annual instalments to include both principal and interest.

15. That according to the Report of the Committee of Council on Education the deficiency in the School Fund to be met by the Rating Authorities out of the Local Rate represents an average rate per £ on the rateable value of such districts of 5ld.

16. That the School Rate of the Borough of Gateshead during the same period was twelve pence per £.

17. That according to the said Report the rate to meet the charges of repayment of Loans and Interest amounted to 1.59d., upon the rateable value of such districts.

18. That a rate of at least  $5\frac{1}{2}$ d. will be required to meet similar charges incurred by the School Board of the Borough of Gateshead.

19. That according to the said Report the number of children attending Board Schools throughout the country is about 25 per cent of the whole, whereas in Gateshead about 70 per cent of the children in attendance at Public Elementary Schools are found in Board Schools.

The School Board of Gateshead having given this matter careful consideration are of opinion that urgent relief is needed, not only in rural districts, but specially in towns the inhabitants of which are largely composed of the industrial classes, and they are of opinion that relief may be afforded by the adoption of the following suggestions:

1st That the Public Works Loan Commissioners be authorised to lend to School Boards money, for the execution of such works, as are approved by the Education Department, at a rate not exceeding  $3\frac{1}{2}$  per cent as originally authorised by the Elementary Education Act 1870.

2nd That in all cases School Boards be allowed (if they prefer) to repay the sum so borrowed by way of annuity VIZ:- equal annual instalments including principal and interest.

3rd That School Boards in "poor populous districts" as originally defined in Lord Sandon's Elementary Education Bill be allowed loans from the said Commissioners at a less rate than  $3\frac{1}{2}$  per cent.

4th That School Boards be, subject to the approval of the Education Department, allowed to spread the repayment of loans over a period of not less than sixty years.

5th: By an amendment of Section 97, Elementary Education Act 1870, by the addition of words to the following effect, VIZ: That where a School Board satisfy the Department that a rate of more than (say) 3d is required to meet the expenses incurred in the Repayment and Interest of Loans, such school board shall be entitled to special relief in respect of the rate over the above said (say) 3d.

It is believed that, by some such means, the unequal incidence may to some extent be relieved without any tendency to additional extravagant outlay. I am to request that you will have the goodness to bring this subject under the notice of your board, and to ask, should they agree with any of these suggestions, if they would be willing to join a united deputation to the Vice President of the Council.

I am,  
Your obedient Servant,  
E.J. Harding.

APPENDIX NO. 11 (d).  
(S.B.M. Vol. F. P. 84).

To:-

The Right Honourable A.J. Mundella M.P.,  
 Vice President of the Committee of Council  
 on Education.

The Memorial of the School Board of the Borough of Gateshead

Sheweth:-

1. That in many School Districts the Education or School rate is becoming a serious burden to local Ratepayers.
2. That in most of the heavily rated districts a very large proportion of the sum raised by rate is absorbed in the Repayment and Interest of Loans.
3. That throughout England and Wales about one third of the total amount thus raised is required for the repayment of these charges.
4. That year by year the sums are constantly increasing.
5. That in Districts where these charges are felt to be oppressive the cause of Education is hindered and rendered unpopular.
6. That in many instances, the increased rate of interest charged by the Public Works Loan Commissioners, beyond the original rate of  $3\frac{1}{2}$  per cent in respect of loans for the full period of 50 years, has been productive of difficulty, and has involved in certain School Board Districts the levying of a rate specially high in order to meet the payment consequent upon such increase.
7. That the Public Works Loan Commissioners place difficulty in the way of loans being repaid by way of annuity, and also frequently restrict the period during which loans are to be repaid, in cases in which the Education Department have consented to the repayment being spread over a greater number of years, and that this has prevented the equalising of the annual sum to be paid in redemption of capital liabilities over the period for which the loan has been approved, and has involved the present Ratepayers in a larger share of repayment than they ought fairly to be charged with.

8. That Section 97 of the Elementary Education Act of 1870 was specially intended to assist poor districts, but such section has been practically inoperative.

9. That in the opinion of the Gateshead School Board these facts prove the urgent necessity of relief being afforded to school board districts generally and specially to districts in which Boards have been compelled to provide school accommodation for large portions of the population.

There followed the five recommendations listed on the open letter to school boards. Appendix No. 11(c).

As witness the Common Seal of the Board this eleventh day of June one thousand eight hundred and eighty-four.

APPENDIX NO. 11 (e).(S.B.M. Vol.F. P. 333).

To the Right Honourable Hugh C.E. Childers M.P.,  
Chancellor of the Exchequer.

The Memorial of the School Board for the Borough of Gateshead,

Sheweth:-

1. That in many School Districts the Education, or School, Rate is becoming a serious burden to the local Ratepayers.
2. That in most of the heavily rated districts a very large proportion of the sum raised by Rate is absorbed in the Repayment and Interest of Loans.
3. That throughout England and Wales about one third of the total amount thus raised is required for repayment of these charges.
4. That year by year these sums are constantly increasing thus during the year ended September 29th, 1873 £373,859 was raised by rate, but in 1883 this sum had increased to £1,990,162 of which amount **NO LESS THAN £660,251 WAS REQUIRED FOR THE REPAYMENT AND INTEREST OF LOANS** alone.
5. That in districts where these charges are felt to be oppressive the cause of Education is hindered and rendered unpopular.
6. That in many instances the increased rate of interest charged by the Public Works Loan Commissioners, beyond the original  $3\frac{1}{2}$  per cent in respect of loans for the full period of 50 years, has been productive of difficulty and has involved, in certain School Board Districts, the levying of a rate specially high in order to meet the payments consequent upon such increase.
7. That the Public Works Loan Commissioners place difficulty in the way of Loans being repaid by way of annuity, and also frequently restrict the period during which Loans are to be repaid, in cases in which the Education Department have consented to the repayment over a greater number of years, and that this has prevented the equalising of the annual sum to be paid in redemption of capital liabilities over the period for which the loan has been approved, and has involved the present ratepayers in a larger share of re-payment than they ought fairly to be charged with.

8. That the Vice President of the Committee of Council on Education has expressed himself as being "satisfied that nothing causes mere discontent or more effectively retards the work of School Boards than the large rates now required to meet the annual charge for school building and this discontent is greatly aggravated by the fact that the rate of interest, which was originally fixed by the Elementary Education Acts of 1870 and 1873, has been materially increased by the Act of 1879, and that the expectations held out in 1870 that the rate would never exceed 3d in the £ have been disappointed."

9. That the reduction in the rate of interest as proposed by the Treasury is totally inadequate to meet the necessities of the case for School Boards "ought (in the words of the Vice President) to be restored to the position which they occupied before the Act of 1879 was passed," and that no fresh legislation is required for this purpose.

10. That Section 97 of the Elementary Education Act of 1870 was specially intended to assist poor Districts but that such Section has been practically inoperative.

11. That in the opinion of the Gateshead School Board these facts prove the urgent necessity of relief being afforded to School Board Districts generally and specially to Districts in which Boards have been compelled to provide School Accommodation for large portions of the population.

Your Memorialists therefore earnestly ask:

That the Lords of the Treasury will be pleased to at once issue such instructions to the Public Works Loan Commissioners as will allow:

1. The rate of interest not to exceed  $3\frac{1}{2}$  per cent on all existing and future loans.

2. The repayment of such loans to be made by way of annuity, if so desired.

3. The repayment to be spread over such number of years as the Education Department may consider equitable, having regard to the facts of each case.

Your Memorialists would further urge -

That at the earliest possible period the legislative should be called upon to provide special relief for

School Boards in "poor populous places" either by an extension of Section 97 of the Elementary Education Act of 1870 or some other means.

As witness the Common Seal of the Board this tenth day of June one thousand eight hundred and eighty five.

APPENDIX NO. 11 (f).

Education Commission 1886-88. Appendix to Final Report, Page 426.

---

XX11

Gateshead School Board.Represent as follows:-

That in many school districts the education or school rate is becoming a serious burden to the Local Ratepayers.

That in most of the heavily rated districts a very large proportion of the sum raised by rate is absorbed in the repayment and interest of loans.

That throughout England and Wales about one-third of the total amount thus raised is required for the payment of these charges.

That year by year these sums are constantly increasing.

That in districts where these charges are felt to be oppressive the cause of education is hindered and rendered unpopular.

That in many instances the increased rate of interest charged by the Public Works Loan Commissioners beyond the original rate of  $3\frac{1}{2}\%$  in respect of loans for the full period of 50 years has been productive of difficulty, and has involved in certain School Board districts the levying of a rate specially high in order to meet the payment consequent upon such increase.

That the Public Works Loan Board place difficulty in the way of loans being repaid by way of annuity, and also frequently restrict the period during which loans are to be repaid, in cases in which the Education Department have consented to the repayment being spread over a greater number of years, and that this has prevented the equalising of the annual sum to be paid in redemption of capital liabilities over the period for which the loan has been approved, and has involved the present ratepayers in a larger share of repayment than they ought fairly to be charged with.

That the Vice-President of the Committee of Council on Education has expressed himself as being "satisfied that nothing causes more discontent or more effectively retards the work of School Boards than the large rates now required to meet the annual charges for school building and this discontent is greatly

Education Commission 1886-88 Continued.

aggravated by the fact that the rate of interest, which was originally fixed by the Elementary Education Acts of 1870 and 1873, has been materially increased by the Act of 1879 and that the expectations held out in 1870 that the rate would never exceed 3d. in the £ have been disappointed.

That the reduction in the rate of interest as proposed by the Treasury is totally inadequate to meet the necessities of the case for school boards "ought" (in the words of Vice-President) "to be restored to the position which they occupied before Act of 1879 was passed," and that no fresh legislation is required for this purpose.

That Section 97 of the Elementary Education Act of 1870 was specially intended to assist poor districts but that such Section has been practically inoperative.

That in the opinion of the Gateshead School Board these facts prove the urgent necessity of relief being afforded to School Board Districts generally and specially to Districts in which Boards have been compelled to provide School accommodation for large portions of the population.

APPENDIX NO. 12.

(S.B.M. Volume A. P. 388)

PUPIL - TEACHER AGREEMENT.

Memorandum of agreement between the School Board of Gateshead and of Joseph Robson Chatt, of Gateshead, Agent, hereafter called 'the Surety' the father of Thomas R. Chatt, hereafter called 'the Pupil Teacher.'

The said Board and their successors covenant with the said Surety his executors and administrators as follows:-

1. The said Board agree to engage the said Pupil Teacher to serve under the certificated teacher during the usual hours in keeping with the High-Level Board School of the said Board and teaching scholars thereat, but so that the said Pupil Teacher shall not be obliged to serve therein more than six hours in anyone day nor more than thirty hours in any one week - Sunday being expressly excluded from this arrangement.
2. This engagement shall begin on the first day of May, 1873 and shall end on the last day of April, 1878 but, if the said Pupil-Teacher shall with the consent of the other parties hereto attend one of the examinations for admission into Training Schools in December next preceding the last mentioned date, this engagement may end on the 31st day of said month of December.
3. The said Board will pay to the said Pupil-Teacher as wages £1.0.10d per month in the first year, and this sum shall be increased by £2.10.0 p.a. in each subsequent year of the engagement, but such increase may be stopped at the discretion of the Board for the unexpired term of any year after receipt of notice from the Education Department that the said Pupil-Teacher has failed to pass the examination, or to fulfil all other conditions of a Pupil-Teacher, according to the standard of the preceding year as prescribed in the articles of the code of the said Education Department applicable to the case.
4. The said Board will cause the said Pupil-Teacher, while school is not being held, to receive without charge from the certificated teacher of the said school for the time being, special instruction during 5 hours per week of which hours not more than two shall be part of the same day. Such special instruction shall be in the subjects in which the said Pupil-Teacher is next to be examined pursuant to the said articles.

5. The said Pupil-Teacher shall be liable to dismissal without notice for idleness, disobedience or immoral conduct of a gross kind respectively, and this engagement will be terminated on either side by a written notice of six months or in lieu of such notice on either side by a payment of £3 in the first year, or £4 in the second, and an additional pound in the succeeding years of the engagement but never exceeding £6 in the whole, such sum to be recoverable as liquidated damages by the Board or by the said Surety as the case may be over and above the settlement of all other accounts, between the parties.

6. The said Pupil-Teacher enters into this agreement freely and voluntarily on his own part, and with the privity and consent of the Surety.

7. The said Surety agrees with the said Board and their successors to clothe, feed, lodge and watch over the said Pupil-Teacher during the continuation of this agreement in a proper manner.

Signed and Delivered this 13th day of August, 1873  
by the said Board - R.S. Newall (Chairman)

Joseph R. Chatt.

Thomas R. Chatt.

In the presence of W.H.D. Longstaffe.

APPENDIX NO 13.

A Leeds Pupil Teacher's Letter setting out work and duties, from General Report for 1894 of schools in the North-Eastern Division of England.

(C.of C.on Ed. 1894-95. P.86).

---

"The manner in which each week of my school life is spent is as follows.  
Every morning I leave home at 8 AM and walk to school in order to be there at 8.45. During the morning, I teach a class of about 36 scholars (Standard V) until 11.30, after which I have private study till 12. Commencing duties at 1.45, I again take my class till 4.30. Arriving home about 5.30, I commence my studies about 6.15. From 6.15 until 10 I spend in preparing the following night's work, this being my timetable for Monday, Wednesday and Friday. Tuesday and Thursday evenings I attend the Voluntary Pupil Teachers' Centre Classes so that I do not reach home till 9.30. Saturday morning I also attend the Centre Classes leaving home at 8 AM and not returning until 1.30 PM. In the afternoon, I generally devote one and a half hours in doing some of the work for the following Saturday's class, Friday being the evening on which the most work has to be done. Occasionally I am able to spend Saturday afternoon as a holiday, but this is very seldom for, unless a portion of the following week's work is done on this occasion, it is impossible to get through the remainder of the work. From this you will see that with the exceptions of a few hours on Saturday together with Sunday, all the rest of the week is completely occupied by school work, and that the recreation at the end of the week is most eagerly looked forward to."

APPENDIX NO. 14.Syllabus of Religious Instruction for Scholars.

(In Code of Regulations for Guidance of  
Teachers 1892 S.B.M. Vol.K. P.165).

---

Infants.

Learn the Ten Commandments; Exodus XX, verses 1 - 17 (the substance only will be required); the Lord's Prayer, and St. Matthew VI verses 9 - 13. Brief account of the early lives of Samuel and David. Leading facts in the life of Christ told in simple language.

Standard I.

Same as for infants; in fuller detail.

Standard II.

Repeat the Ten Commandments and the Lord's Prayer. Learn St. Matthew V, 1 - 12 and St. Matthew XXII, 35 - 40. The life of Abraham. Simple outline of the life of Christ.

Standard III.

Memory work, as in Standards I and II. Learn Psalm XXXIII. The life of Joseph. Fuller outline of the life of Christ, write an account of the following parables: the two debtors; the Good Samaritan; the Prodigal Son; the Merciless Servant; the Lost Sheep; the Pharisee and the Publican.

Standard IV.

Memory work as in Standard III. Learn St. John XIII verses 15 - 31. The life of Moses; the life of Christ (first part) as gathered from the Gospels - St. Matthew to XIV verse 36; St. Mark to VI verse 56; St. Luke to IX verse 17; St. John to VII verse 1. VIZ to third Passover; with an account of the following parables:- the Sower, the Mustard Seed; the Wheat and the Tares; the Pearl of Great Price. Slight knowledge of the geography of Palestine.

Standard V.

Memory Work as in Standard IV. Learn Ephesians VI verses 1 - 18. The lives of Samuel, Saul and David. The life of Christ continued (second part) from third Passover to end of Gospels. Acts of the Apostles first two chapters.

Standard VI.

Memory work as in Standard V. Learn Isiah LIII and Ephesians IV verses 25 - 32. The lives of Elijah and Daniel. Recapitulation of the life of Christ together with an account of his discourses as given in St. John chapters III., VI 1 - 40 and X; Acts of the Apostles, Chapter VII.

Standard VII and Upwards.

Memory work as in Standard VI. Learn First Corinthians XIII. Recapitulation of the lives of Abraham, Moses, Samuel, Saul, David and Daniel. Recapitulation of the life of Christ as in Standard VI. Acts of the Apostles with especial reference to the life and missionary journeys of St. Paul.

BIBLIOGRAPHYAbbreviations

G.C.L. = Gateshead Central Library.

N.U.L. = Newcastle University Library.

C.R.L.N. = Central Reference Library, Newcastle.

D.E.S.L. = Department of Education and Science Library, London.

Primary Sources

Gateshead School Board Minutes (MSS); 16 Volumes..

H.M.I.'s Reports on Gateshead Board Schools, (MSS).

Annual Reports of the Committee of Council on  
Education 1845; 1857-58; 1871; 1876-77; 1893-94;  
1894-95; 1903.

The above are the property of the Gateshead Education  
Committee, and were kindly made available for use in  
Gateshead Central Library (G.C.L.).

Log Book of Prior Street Boys School 1874-1891, (MSS).

Log Book of Prior Street Girls School 1874-1902, (MSS).  
(kindly lent by the present Headmaster)

Gateshead School Board Triennial Reports 1876-1900,  
2 Volumes;, (G.C.L.).

Abstract of Borough Accounts 1887, (G.C.L.).

Abstract of Borough Accounts 1893-1912, (G.C.L.).

Report of Education Commission 1886-88, (D.E.S.L.).

Department of Education Code of Regulations 1871  
and 1882 (D.E.S.L.).

Local WorksLocal History

Bourne, H. History of Newcastle upon Tyne or The  
Ancient and Present State of the Town (1736), (G.C.L.).

Brand, J. The History and Antiquities of the Town and County of Newcastle upon Tyne (1789), 2 Vols. (G.C.L.).

Fordyce, W. History and Antiquities of the County Palatine of Durham (1857), 2 Vols. (G.C.L.).

Mackenzie, E. A Descriptive and Historical Account of the Town and County of Newcastle upon Tyne and the Borough of Gateshead, (1827), (G.C.L.).

Mackenzie, E. & Ross, M. Historical and Descriptive View of the County Palatine of Durham (1834), 2 Vols. (G.C.L.).

Middlebrook, S. Newcastle upon Tyne: Its Growth and Achievement. Newcastle Journal 1950. (G.C.L.).

Victoria County History of Durham. 3 Vols. (1905-28) (G.C.L.).

#### Local Records of Gateshead

Gateshead County Borough Official Year Book 1966-67. (G.C.L.).

Gateshead Endowed Charities, 1904. (G.C.L.).

Gateshead Notes collected by J. Oxberry. 6 Vols. (G.C.L.).

Gateshead Scraps collected by J. Oxberry. 4 Vols. (G.C.L.).

Gateshead Schools and Education Week 1928. (G.C.L.).

Local Collections, or Records of Remarkable Events in the Borough of Gateshead, 1837-54. 5 Vols. (G.C.L.).

The Poor and Charities of Gateshead, 1825. (G.C.L.).

#### Local Directories

F. White and Co: Directory of Newcastle upon Tyne and Gateshead 1847. (G.C.L.).

Hagar's Directory of County Durham 1851. (G.C.L.).

T. Whelan and Co: Directory and Topography of the County of Durham with Newcastle upon Tyne 1856 and 1865. (G.C.L.).

Ward's Directory of Newcastle and Gateshead 1865-66; 1879-80; 1883-84; 1885-86; 1887-88; 1889-90; 1893-94; 1897-98; 1899-90; 1901-02; 1903-04; (G.C.L.).

Kelly's Directory of Newcastle and Gateshead, 1894.

## Local Newspapers

- Collected News Cuttings. (G.C.L.).
- Gateshead Observer, 1837-49 (C.R.L.N.).
- Newcastle Daily Journal 1870 (C.R.L.N.).
- Newcastle Daily Chronicle 1870-79; 1881-1903. (C.R.L.N.).
- Newcastle Daily Leader 1885-1903. (C.R.L.N.).

## General Educational Works

- Adamson, J. W: A Short History of Education. Cambridge University Press. 1922. (N.U.L.).
- Armytage, W. H. G: Four Hundred Years of English Education. Cambridge, 1964. (G.C.L.).
- Balfour, Graham: The Educational Systems of Great Britain and Ireland. Oxford Clarendon Press, 1903 (N.U.L.).
- Bingham, J. H: Education Under the Local Authority in Sheffield. The Period of the Sheffield School Board 1870-1903. Sheffield Northend, 1949. (N.U.L.).
- Birchenough, Charles: History of English Elementary Education from 1800 to the Present Day. University Tutorial Press, 3rd Edition, 1938. (N.U.L.).
- Eaglesham, E.J.R: From School Board to Local Authority. Routledge and Kegan Paul, London, 1956. (G.C.L.).
- "Elementary Education Bill 1870 - A Verbatim Report of the Debate in Parliament". Published by the National Educational Union, 1870. (N.U.L.).
- Jarman, Thomas Leckie: Landmarks in the History of Education. London Cresset Press, 1951. (N.U.L.).
- Jones, Lance, G.E: The Training of Teachers in England and Wales. O.U.P. 1924. (N.U.L.).
- Smith, Frank: A History of English Elementary Education 1760-1902. University of London Press, 1931 (N.U.L.).
- Wells, E. M. & Taylor, P. S: The New Law on Education, 5th Edition Butterworth's London 1961. (N.U.L.).

## General Works

House, J. W: North-Eastern Population Movements. Department of Geography, King's College, University of Durham, 1954. (G.C.L.).

Who Was Who. 1929-40

(G.C.L.).

## University Theses

Bramwell, R. D: "Elementary School Work 1875-1925" Ph.D. Thesis University of Durham, 1958. (N.U.L.).

Crennel, Marjorie: "Some Aspects of Education in Northumberland and Durham from 1870 to 1950 with special reference to Scientific and Technical Education" M.Ed. Thesis King's College, University of Durham, 1953. (N.U.L.).

Mason, M. G: "History of Elementary Education on Tyneside Before 1870" M.Ed. Thesis, University of Durham 1954. (N.U.L.).

Also Mason M. G: History of Elementary Education on Tyneside Before 1870. Durham Research Review No.2, 1951 (N.U.L.).

Taylor, A. M: "The Gateshead School Boards 1870-76". M.A.Thesis University of Newcastle, 1964 (N.U.L.).

INDEX OF SCHOOLS

## GATESHEAD SCHOOLS

Permanent Board Schools

Alexandra Road; site, 26, 28; school, 29, 34-9, 43, 47, 58-9, 67-8, 77, 79, 91, 133, 152, 154, 156, 161, 171, 174 (footnote), 176, 208, 216-8, 221-3, 225-7, 233, 257, 289, 292-3, 298.

Askew Road; 60, 67, 79, 91, 136-8, 152, 216-8, 221-3, 225-7, 292-3.

Brighton Avenue; 74, 77, 79, 152, 225-7, 236, 269, 287.

Chester Place (site); 78, 80.

Durham Road (South Street); 60, 74, 79, 91, 136-8, 151-2, 156, 216-8, 221-3, 225-7, 238, 292.

Grant Street, (New Gateshead); 39-41, 43, 58, 77, 79, 91, 171, 203, 208, 216, 218-9, 222-3, 226, 289.

## Higher Grade Schools:

Freeman's Terrace, Temporary Premises; 102, 113-4.

In Day Industrial School Premises; 102, 114-9, 156-7, 264 (footnote) 289, 291.

Durham Road; 67, 79, 121-9, 236, 267-8, 288, 296, 322-3.

Whitehall Road; 68 (footnote), 79, 91, 119-29, 159, 161, 225, 287-8.

Kelvin Grove (site); 78, 80, 229.

Low Fell Infants'; 32, 49, 50, 58, 171, 203, 208, 216, 219, 223, 227.

Low Fell Senior; site, 74; school, 77, 225; both schools, 79, 91, 152, 156, 160.

Nun's Lane; 67, 77, 79, 226-7.

Oakwellgate; 49, 53-5, 58, 67, 77, 79, 91, 138-9, 152, 171, 201, 216-9, 221-3, 225-7, 298.

Prior Street; site, 26, 28; school, 32, 34, 37, 43, 58, 68, 77, 79, 91, 132-3, 152, 171, 173 (footnote), 176, 208, 216-9, 221-3, 225-7, 232, 233(footnote), 243, 260-3, 277-281, 284-6, 288-293, 297-300.

Redheugh; site, 42-3,; school, 19, 44-5, 49, 58, 68, 79, 91, 138, 152, 159-60, 171, 173 (footnote), 216-9, 221, 223, 225-7, 232, 256, 281 (footnote), 289, 293, 298.

Rose Street; 74, 77, 79, 226.

Sheriff Hill; site, 26; school, 41-2, 44, 58, 68, 70, 77, 79, 91, 139, 152, 171, 208, 216-9, 221, 223, 225, 227, 232, 255, 289, 298.

Sunderland Road; site, 26, 28; 45-6; school, 46-9, 58, 79-80, 91, 136-8, 152, 155-6, 171, 201, 216-7, 221-3, 225-7, 289, 292, 298, 300.

Victoria Road; 67, 77-80, 91, 139, 152, 216-9, 221-3, 226-7, 232.

Wrekenton; 39-40, 43, 58, 68, 70, 79, 91, 171, 203, 216, 219, 223, 227.

Windmill Hills; 49, 58, 79, 91, 93, 97-8, 111, 171, 201, 216, 219, 221-3, 225-7.

### Voluntary Schools

Abbot Memorial Industrial School; 16, 101, 109,

Anchorage School; 1-9.

British School, Grosvenor Street; 11-13.

Congregational School, Rochester Street; 68; became Board School; 74-6, 79, 227.

Ellison Infants and Sunday School; 16, 43, 58, 60-7, 77, 91, 216, 219, 223, 298.

Friar's Goose Chemical Works School; 13-15.

High Fell National School; 16, 34, 39.

- Low Fell National; (became Board Temporary School); 16, 39, 43, 58, 154.
- St. Cuthbert's (Lady Vernon's School); 15, 43, 58, 68, 79.
- St James's Chapel School; 17, 131.
- St Joseph's R.C. School; 16, 43, 58, 68, 79, 131.
- St. Oswald's (Wrekenton) R.C. School; 69-72, 79.
- St. Wilfred's ( Park Lane) R.C. School; 16, 69, 72-4, 79.
- Wesleyan School; 16, 43, 58, 79.
- Wrekenton National School; 16.

#### Temporary Board Schools

- Carr Hill; 67.
- Dunsmuir Grove (Kelvin Grove Temporary School); 78-9.
- Ely Street; 60, 67 (footnote).
- Higher Grade (Freeman's Terrace); 102, 113-4.
- High Level Road; 30-1, 33, 44, 47, 59, 82, 133, 208, 242, 254, 289, 298.
- Low Fell Infant's; 32.
- Mount Pleasant (Fife Street); 49-51, 59, 74, 91, 216, 219, 223.
- Oakwellgate (Alexandra Hall); 30, 49, 53, 55,  
Oakwellgate (Temperance Hall); 60, 67 (footnote).
- Park Lane; 31.
- Pipewellgate; 33, 44, 79, 91, 133, 203, 216, 219, 227.
- Sheriff Hill (2 schools); 30, 32, 44.
- Sunderland Road Mission Rooms; 46.

Teams (Wilson Street); 32, 33, 44.

Windmill Hills; 49, 51-3, 55.

Other Schools in Gateshead

Gateshead School of Art; 315-321.

Private Venture Schools; 17-19, 82-5.

Proposed R. C. School at Teams; 59, 69.

Other Schools mentioned in the Text

Chadwick Industrial School; 109.

Gem Street Industrial School, Birmingham; 94.

Girls' Industrial School, Coatham Road, Bristol; 94.

St. James's Back Industrial School, Bristol; 94.

St. Nicholas' School, Newcastle; 82.

Wellesley Training Ship(Industrial School), Blyth; 101, 109.

20 That under these circumstances the Public Works Loan Commissioners be requested to allow the School Board of Gateshead to alter its mode of payment as stated in paragraph 14.

As witness the Common Seal of the Board, this twenty second day of February, One Thousand Eight Hundred and Eighty-two.

G. T. France  
Chairman of the Board.

E. J. Harding  
Clerk.

1. The first part of the document is a list of names and addresses.

2. The second part of the document is a list of names and addresses.

3. The third part of the document is a list of names and addresses.

4. The fourth part of the document is a list of names and addresses.

5. The fifth part of the document is a list of names and addresses.

APPENDIX NO. 11 (c).  
 (S.B.M. Vol.F. P.59).

Gateshead School Board.

April 1884.

Dear -

School Board Rates.

The Gateshead School Board have unanimously passed a resolution that efforts be made to obtain some relief from the increasing pressure of School Board Rates.

Although, from the last Annual Report of the Committee of Council on Education, the annual cost of maintenance in Board Schools had decreased, yet amounts received by school boards from rating authorities "to meet the deficiency in the School Fund" are annually increasing, nor is it at all likely that these amounts will diminish in the near future, but, on the other hand, it is certain they will increase.

Large numbers of School Boards both in Boroughs and Parishes are now feeling acutely the drain upon their resources, in that large item of expenditure - the Repayment and Interest of Loans - as an annual rate of not less than 2d in the pound on the rateable value of the School Districts is now required to meet these expenses alone.

This rate necessarily varies according to the accommodation which particular School Boards have had to make, and in many districts it undoubtedly assumes very serious proportions.

Thus in the Borough of Gateshead while for the year ended 20th March 1884, £8,000 was received from the rating authority; £4,479.14.8 of this amount was absorbed in the Repayment and Interest of Loans - equal to a Rate of 6d in the £ on the rateable value of the district.

As the population of the country increases these charges must necessarily increase, and although some increases in the rateable value of School Districts may take place, yet in the majority of cases, it will not be sufficient to meet the additional expenses incurred in carrying out the Elementary Education Acts.

APPENDIX NO. 11 (b).  
(S.B.M. Vol.E. P.31).

To:-

The Public Works Loan Commissioners,  
 3, Bank Buildings,  
 London, E.C.

Repayment of Loans

The Memorial of the School Board of the Borough of Gateshead

Sheweth:-

1. That the School Board of the Borough of Gateshead was elected pursuant to an order of the Education Department, on 28th November, 1870.

2. That the population of the School District of the said Board was according to the Census of 1871, 48,627.

3. That the population of the same District, according to the Census of 1881 was 65,845.

4. That the great majority of the inhabitants of the said School District are engaged in industrial occupations, and consequently most of the children residing in the District are of the Class for whom Elementary School accommodation falls to be provided.

5. That the School Board, in obedience to the orders (or under the sanction) of the Education Department, have provided permanent School accommodation for 5,794 children in addition to the erection of a Certified Day Industrial School for 200 children.

6. That for these purposes the Board have borrowed, under the provisions of the Elementary Education Acts, from the Public Works Loan Commissioners, the sum of £69,116.

7. That the Board are now actively engaged in providing additional School accommodation for 1,483 children, at an additional cost of £12,462, which sum the Public Works Loan Commissioners have agreed to advance.

8. That owing to the rapid increase of population the Board will probably be compelled to provide additional School Accommodation within a short period.

